



PHILIPPINE POLITICS AND GOVERNANCE

FOR SENIOR HIGH SCHOOL

ARNEL E. JOVEN, PH.D.

PHILIPPINE POLITICS AND GOVERNANCE

FOR SENIOR HIGH SCHOOL

PHILIPPINE POLITICS AND GOVERNANCE

FOR SENIOR HIGH SCHOOL

Arnel E. Joven, Ph.D.



C & E Publishing, Inc.
2017



**C & E
Publishing, Inc.**

*C & E Publishing, Inc.
was established in 1993
and is a member of ABAP, PBAI,
NBDB, and PEPA.*

Philippine Politics and Governance for Senior High School
Published by C & E Publishing, Inc.
839 EDSA, South Triangle, Quezon City
Tel. No.: (02) 929-5088
e-mail: info@cebookshop.com

Copyright © 2017 by C & E Publishing, Inc. and
Arnel E. Joven, Ph.D.

All rights reserved. No part of this publication may be reproduced, stored in a retrieval system, or transmitted in any form or by any means—electronic, mechanical, photocopying, recording, or otherwise—without the prior written permission of the publisher.

Editing: Leonora R. Dimagiba
Michael J. Ditchella
Isabel T. Oflas

Cover Design: Jenno dC. Diaz

Layout Design Jolly Monique B. Dela Peña

eISBN 978-971-98-0710-0ME

Table of Contents



Preface	vii
UNIT 1: An Introduction to Politics and Governance	
LESSON 1: Politics and Governance: Key Concepts	2
LESSON 2: Power and Accountability	19
LESSON 3: State, Nation, and Globalization	34
LESSON 4: Understanding Political Ideologies	48
UNIT 2: The Development of Philippine Democracy	
LESSON 5: Early Political Systems From Precolonial Times Until the Philippine Revolution	66
LESSON 6: Philippine Politics in the 20th Century	94
LESSON 7: An Introduction to the 1987 Constitution	118
UNIT 3: A Closer Look at the Philippine Government	
LESSON 8: Legislation and the Rule of Law	134
LESSON 9: The Executive Branch and Local Government	153
LESSON 10: The Judicial Branch	170
LESSON 11: Elections in the Philippines	184
UNIT 4: Active Citizenship and Progressive Development	
LESSON 12: Citizenship and Governance	204
LESSON 13: Participation and Engagement in Politics and Society	214
LESSON 14: Civil Society Organizations and Social Movements	232
Appendix: The 1987 Constitution	243
Glossary	301
Bibliography	317
Index	331

Preface



This textbook endeavors to familiarize the students with the significant features of Philippine politics and governance through the discussion and analysis of concepts, theories, and issues that define and influence political developments in our country. The discussions outline the basic foundations of political science, significant political concepts and theories, the development of Philippine democracy, important features of the Philippine government, as well as avenues for citizen participation in governance.

The book is divided into four units:

Unit 1 – An Introduction to Politics and Governance gives an overview of the political concepts and theories relevant to the study of Philippine politics and governance. The students are introduced to political science as an academic discipline, as well as its various methods and related concepts. In particular, the discussions focus on clarifying the concepts of state, nation, power, authority, and accountability. The significance of globalization in politics, as well as key political ideologies, are also discussed and analyzed.

Unit 2 – The Development of Philippine Democracy explores the historical development and foundations of Philippine government from ancient to present times. The discussion highlights the historical influences that defined political developments in the country and the various challenges that the Philippine state faced. In particular, the development of Philippine nationalism is highlighted, as well as the Filipino response to colonialism.

Unit 3 – A Closer Look at the Philippine Government describes the significant features of the Philippine government, focusing on the executive, legislative, and judicial branches. Included in the discussions are an examination of local government and Philippine elections.

Unit 4 – Active Citizenship and Progressive Development further discusses the concept of citizenship and relates it to engagement and participation in governance. The discussion also presents avenues for participation in government, such as engaging in responsible citizenship and participating in civil society and social movements.

The discussion and activities featured in this book encourage students to adopt a more comprehensive view in looking at political developments, issues, and problems in the local, national, and global level. It also provides them opportunities for advocacy-building,

community interaction, and participation in government – empowering them to take the initiative in addressing concerns and issues in their respective communities.

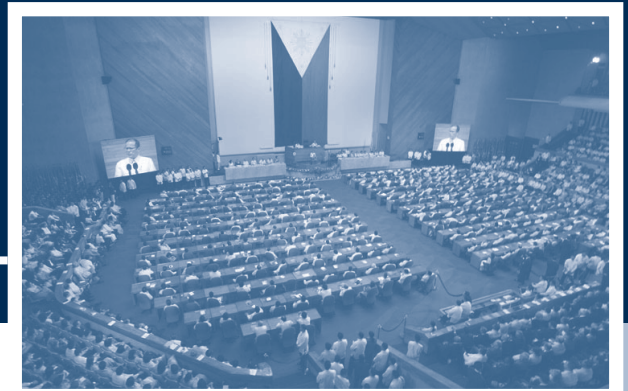
It is hoped that this textbook will inspire students to take on active roles in their respective communities and lead them on a path to becoming responsible and active Filipinos as well as enlightened global citizens.

— **The Author**

UNIT 1

An Introduction to

POLITICS AND GOVERNANCE



LESSON

- 1 Politics and Governance: Key Concepts
- 2 Power and Accountability
- 3 State, Nation, and Globalization
- 4 Understanding Political Ideologies

Lesson 1

POLITICS AND GOVERNANCE: KEY CONCEPTS

ENGAGE

What is politics? Why do the media devote much attention to political events and politicians? How do politics and governance affect our daily life? Politics is both the art and science of government actions that create policies or laws that affect citizens like us. Governance, meanwhile, focuses on the actions and activities by which the government directly influences our lives. The democratic nature of politics and governance means that politicians and citizens influence each other and work together in making policies and implementing decisions that will benefit society. As citizens, we must know and be aware of the various functions and roles of government, and the underlying principles that define our particular type of government and political system.

At the end of the lesson, students are expected to answer the following questions:

1. How does political science make sense of issues related to politics and governance?
2. What changes and factors define the development of political science as a discipline?
3. What are the various ideas and views regarding politics and governance? How do these influence our present ideas regarding what a government is?
4. What factors define the nature and structure of a government? How do various states differ in terms of the form and system of government?
5. How does governance contribute to the development of the state?
6. How can knowledge regarding politics and governance help citizens address concerns and issues in society?

Discuss

Politics and Political Science

Politics is commonly defined as the process that determines the distribution of power and resources. It also refers to the theory and practice of how people influence others in making decisions and carrying out projects or programs. Politics, as defined within political science,

refers to human behavior with regard to matters related to government activities such as the formulation and execution of policies, creation of laws, selection of government officials; negotiations with foreign governments and other entities or organizations; protection of territorial boundaries; preservation of cultural heritage and tradition; and upholding the public interest and welfare. Politics is often associated with the concept of power and the exercise of legitimate authority in a state.

Political science is a branch of the social sciences that deals with the study of politics. It deals with systems of government and the analysis of political activity, political behavior, and political theories and practices. As a social science, political science follows scientific methodology in the investigation and study of human behavior in relation to political activities and developments. It draws upon the fields of economics, law, sociology, history, anthropology, public administration, public policy, national politics, international relations, comparative politics, psychology, political organization, and political theory. Political Science studies the allocation and transfer of power in decision making; the roles and systems of governance including governments and international organizations; political behavior and public policies.

People who devote their academic careers to the study of Political Science are referred to as **political scientists**. They are engaged in analyzing the relationships underlying political events and conditions. They also attempt to formulate general principles about the way the world of politics works. Political scientists, like historians, utilize primary sources which include historical documents, and secondary sources such as published books and journals. Similar to anthropologists, political scientists also utilize a wide variety of frameworks to understand social behavior. These conceptual frameworks include positivism, interpretivism, rational choice theory, behavioralism, structuralism, post-structuralism, realism, and pluralism.

Political scientists measure the success of governance and specific policies by examining various factors such as social and political stability, justice, material wealth, peace, and public health. Some political scientists seek to advance **normative theses**, or ideal descriptions of political situations, in their analysis of politics. Others, meanwhile, propose **positive theses**, which describe political situations as they are, as well as specific policy recommendations.

Fields of Study and Branches of Political Science

As an academic field, political science has evolved into a discipline that has developed the following branches: political theory, comparative politics, public administration, international relations, public law, and political methodology. **Political theory** is concerned with the study of the ideas and contributions of classical thinkers such as Chanakya, Aristotle, Niccolò Machiavelli, Cicero, Plato and many others. **Comparative politics** compares and analyzes the various types of constitutions, political actors, legislature and associated fields among countries, as well as within a single country over a period of time.

Public administration is the study of the implementation of government policy and public service. **International relations**, meanwhile, deals with the political-economic interaction between nation-states as well as intergovernmental and transnational organizations. **Public law** is a field of law that studies the relationship between the government and citizens. Finally, **political methodology** is the branch of political science that uses quantitative methods to describe and define political phenomena.

Key Concepts in Political Science

Among the most significant concepts that are the focus of study in political science is the **state**. The state is defined as an organized political community living under a government. It is composed of the following elements: population, territory, government, and sovereignty. **Population** refers to the people that compose the state, while **territory** refers to the place where the people that compose the state are located, and includes the land, natural resources and air space located within it. **Government** is the system that administers or controls the state, and is the instrument through which the will of the state is made known and implemented. **Sovereignty** refers to the ability of the state to govern itself without outside influence or interference.

Other important concepts that should be considered in studying politics include legitimacy, governance, and ideology. **Legitimacy** is the right of the government to exercise power and authority, and also refers to the recognition given to a state by foreign governments and international organizations.

Governance refers to all actions and activities related to governing. It is defined by the interaction and decision-making among policy-makers, public officials, and citizens involved in addressing collective problems. These interactions lead to the creation and reinforcement of social norms and institutions.

Ideology is a set of ideas and beliefs that define the views and actions of individuals, groups, and institutions. Political ideology, meanwhile, refers to the principles and theories that the government follows or carries out. These political theories are adopted by government and applied to state activities, political conditions, and developments. Democracy itself has emerged as an ideology and has been defined and discussed in modern studies and theories on the conduct and development of state functions, government policies, and governance.

The Development of Political Science

Politics in Greco-Roman Times

Though political science was established as a formal discipline in the 19th century, its fundamental concepts have already been introduced by ancient philosophers and thinkers such as Plato and Aristotle. The writings of Plato and Aristotle discussed various political

concepts such as government, leadership, and citizenship. Plato's *The Republic* and *The Laws* focused on political analysis and theories relating to governance. Aristotle's *The Politics* and *Nicomachean Ethics* dealt with politics and the history of Greek statesmanship and citizenship. The Greeks' concept of democracy, as well as their varied thoughts on politics, was a unique and significant intellectual development in the ancient world.

The ancient Romans were influenced by the Greek political philosophy and developed representative democracy and the republican form of government. Roman historians Polybius, Plutarch, and Livy carefully documented and analyzed Rome's political rise in the Mediterranean world. Their works served as historical and political commentaries on political developments during Roman times. During the period of the Roman Empire, the Roman senator Cicero became known for his discourses and speeches advocating good governance under Imperial dictatorships. Stoicism, a philosophy that advocated hierarchical order and state duties, served as a model for political stability. The emperor Marcus Aurelius was renowned as a Stoic philosopher, along with the philosopher and statesman Seneca.

Medieval and Renaissance Political Thought

The decline of the Roman Empire was characterized by the emergence of monarchies and tyrannies. The end of the Roman period gave way to Medieval times and the rise of powerful feudal nobles. Augustine of Hippo was recognized for his writings such as *City of God*, which was a philosophical criticism of the political corruption that characterized the latter part of the Roman Empire. Augustine's books also analyzed the social causes of Rome's decline and why it became prone to attacks by Germanic tribes. During the High Middle Ages, Thomas Aquinas's writings on ethics were inspired by Aristotle's works. Meanwhile, during the reign of the Abbasid Caliphate, the Arab scholar Averroes wrote a very rich commentary on Plato's *The Republic*. The *Rubaiyat of Omar Khayam* and Ferdowsi's *Epic of Kings* served as analyses of political structures and developments in the Islamic civilization. In Renaissance Europe, the study of political behavior was revived as feudalism declined and political systems gave way to the rise of the middle classes and stronger monarchies. Important thinkers during this period include Niccolo Machiavelli who advocated radical pragmatism and analyzed the behavior of princes and rulers in Europe in his book, *The Prince*. The English philosopher Thomas More, meanwhile, advocated a moral and ethical ideal state in his book *Utopia*.

The Age of Enlightenment up to the 19th century

The seventeenth and eighteenth centuries were the golden age of political enlightenment. This period was defined by the works and contributions of philosophers such as Denis Diderot, John Locke, Jean Jacques Rousseau, Thomas Hobbes, and Voltaire. These enlightenment philosophers advocated the need for a strong government that will impose law and order and protect the rights and privileges of people. John Locke was a strong proponent of Natural Law, which promoted the idea that each individual person possesses inalienable rights that cannot

be violated by the state. Jean Jacques Rousseau proposed the concept of Social Contract, which limited the powers of the king and made the government answerable to the people.

In the United States, political thinkers such as Alexander Hamilton, Benjamin Franklin, and Thomas Jefferson contributed much to the development of American republicanism and democracy. But despite the long history of political thought and the varied and significant contributions of philosophers, theorists, and writers, the study of politics was still considered an offshoot of philosophy. It was only in the late nineteenth century that political science was established as a formal academic discipline within the social sciences. This development was brought about in American universities such as Johns Hopkins University, Columbia, Princeton, and Harvard. In 1903, the American Political Science Association was established and its journal, the *American Political Science Review*, was first released in 1906.

Modern Political Science

Political science in the 1950s and the 1960s was defined by a behavioral revolution that stressed the systematic and rigorous scientific study of individual and group behavior. Early works on behavioral political science focused on studying political behavior rather than analyzing institutions or interpreting legal texts. Political scientists who exemplified the behavioral view included Robert Dahl, Philip Converse, sociologist Paul Lazarsfeld, and public opinion scholar Bernard Berelson. During the late 1960s and early 1970s, political scientists began using deductive techniques, game theory, and formal modeling techniques which sought to redefine the discipline into a more analytical field of knowledge. This period saw a surge of research that borrowed theory and methods from economics to study political institutions such as the United States Congress, as well as political behavior such as voting. The main proponents of this shift were William H. Riker and his colleagues and students at the University of Rochester.

Government and Governance Explained

Basic Types and Forms of Government

Different types and forms of governments have evolved throughout history in various parts of the world. The major types of government according to classical arrangement are monarchy, aristocracy, and democracy. **Monarchy** refers to a government ruled by a single person. The sole ruler in a monarchy is called a monarch but may be known by various terms such as king, sultan, and prince. A monarch rules with the help of a bureaucracy composed of ministers, court officials, and local governors. A monarchy whose rule is defined and limited by a constitution is called a **constitutional monarchy**. Examples of modern states that still recognize a monarch as head of government are the United Kingdom, Spain, and Japan. An **oligarchy** or **aristocracy**, meanwhile, refers to the rule by a small group of people. During the medieval period, the nobility established an aristocracy where only those belonging to

the political and social elite had the right to govern. **Direct democracy**, based on the ancient Athenian form of government, refers to the rule of the people, who directly participate in all government activities. On the other hand, **representative** or **republican democracy** was an innovation introduced by the Romans, where citizens elect representatives who will defend their interests in the government. At present, republican democracy is the most popular form of government throughout the world.

The widely recognized forms and systems of democratic governments at present are based on the means by which power is distributed among the leaders and institutions of government. A **presidential system** recognizes the president as the highest official and head of the executive branch. The executive branch also exists separately from the legislative branch of government. Presidential governments have legislatures which are organized based on a **congressional system**. The legislature may either be unicameral (composed of one house, such as an Assembly), or bicameral (composed of two houses, such as the House of Representatives and Senate). A **parliamentary system**, meanwhile, is characterized by a close relationship between the executive and legislative branches. In this system, the government is headed by a prime minister and his or her cabinet who are chosen among the ranks of legislators in the parliament. A **presidential-parliamentary** system, as the name suggests, is a combination of the two. In this system, the president is elected by the citizens. He or she then appoints a prime minister and cabinet from the members of the legislative branch. The powers of the president vary widely among the countries that practice the presidential-parliamentary system, however, he or she holds the power to dissolve the parliament or assembly and organize a new government. Finally, a **federal government** is composed of individual states with their own democratic governments that come together as a federation. There is a clear division of power between the federal government and the member states.

Certain states adopt unique combinations of the different types and forms of government. For example, the United Kingdom is a constitutional monarchy with a parliamentary system. The United States is a federal government that has a presidential system. South Africa has a unique presidential-parliamentary government where the President is both head of state and head of government and is elected by members of the parliament.

How a Government is Formed

When we consider the government as a formal, structured entity through which the state exercises its will, it is understood to be formed according to what is prescribed or mandated by the constitution, organic laws, or traditional customs of a state. A **constitution** is a set of primary principles and laws that defines what government the people intends to establish. It guides the government as it rules the state. The First Philippine Republic was established in 1899 with the proclamation of the Malolos Constitution. Subsequent Philippine republics have been established through the same process. Our present government, the Fifth Republic of the Philippines, was established in 1987 with the formal proclamation and ratification of

the 1987 Philippine Constitution. Once a state has recognized a certain type of government to exercise political power, it cannot be easily changed or dismantled.

When looking at the government as a group of people empowered to exercise authority, it can be established by a variety of means. Within the democratic framework of government and governance, elections are the primary means through which citizens establish their government. An **election** is an important political exercise by which citizens select individuals who will occupy positions in the government. Election into a position gives officials the **legitimacy** to wield power and authority, and “establish a government.” The elected officials organize themselves and other institutions based on a program of government and implement policies and projects that will bring about the objectives of the program. Legitimacy also stems from the acceptance of the government by its citizens and its the recognition by other nations.

In a presidential system such as in the Philippines and in the United States, a government is formed after the members of the executive and legislative branches are elected into office. The President is tasked to immediately appoint members of the cabinet who will constitute the “government.” The members of the cabinet and other appointed officials are not elected members of Congress. In keeping with the principle of separation of powers and to avoid any conflict of interest, elected officials who are appointed to cabinet posts must vacate their elected positions before becoming members of the cabinet. In the Philippines, the Vice President is the only elected official who may be appointed a secondary position as a cabinet official.

In countries with parliamentary systems of government, the people elect the members of the parliament, who in turn, appoint the Prime Minister from the political party that obtained the majority vote. The Prime Minister then selects cabinet officials from elected members of the parliament. As such, the cabinet ministers constitute the “new government” which is accountable to the Parliament.

Government may also be formed through a military coup, a revolution, foreign occupation, or other forcible means to replace an existing government. Under these extraordinary conditions, a government is formed according to the objectives and desires of the ruling faction or group that seized power. Governments organized through violent means or the overthrow of a legitimate government often lack legitimacy and find it difficult to gain the recognition of other nations. Officials who gain power through violent means often have to deal with opposition from various sectors of society. These governments then attempt to gain legitimacy through elections or constitutional conventions that will enable them to acquire recognition and acceptance.

The Branches of Government

The three main branches of government are the executive, legislative, and judicial branches. These branches are present in majority of modern states, whatever the type or system of government they implement.

The **executive branch** is the institution that governs the state by implementing laws and creating policies and programs to respond to the needs of the state. This branch is headed by the chief executives such as the President and Prime Minister. Other members of the executive branch include the Vice President, Deputy Prime Minister, and the cabinet. Cabinet members and officials constitute the executive bureaucracy that assists the chief executive in his or her functions. The local executives exercise executive functions at the regional, provincial and city levels. These government officials include regional and provincial governors, city and town mayors, and village chiefs or leaders. In the Philippine government, the chief executive is the President, while local officials include the provincial governors, city and municipal mayors, and barangay chairpersons.

The **legislative branch** is the lawmaking institution of the government, also known as the legislature. In a presidential system, the government has a legislative branch distinct from the executive branch, while in the parliamentary system, the legislative and executive branches are combined. In the Philippines, the legislative branch is embodied by the Philippine Congress which is divided into two houses – the upper house or the Senate, and the lower house or the House of Representatives. The members of Congress in these two houses are elected by the citizens and are tasked with crafting the laws of the state. Legislators represent their constituents and are expected to create laws according to the needs, interests, and sentiments of the people they represent. The legislative branch also holds the “power of the purse” since it enacts laws that impose taxes, and determines how public funds will be spent through the government budget. In the local government, the provincial, city or town councils serve as local legislative bodies.

The **judicial branch** or the **judiciary** is composed of the courts that interpret and apply the laws of the state. The highest court in the Philippines is the Supreme Court which oversees all lower and special courts in the country. The judicial branch is tasked with hearing and deciding cases of violations of the law. In the case of the Supreme Court, it also hears cases pertaining to interpretations of the law, the validity of any agreements or treaties, and whether the actions and decisions of any official or government institution violate any law of the state.

The three branches of government are considered to be co-equal and separate, under the principle of **separation of powers**. Under this principle, each branch has specific areas of responsibility. One branch cannot unduly influence the actions and decisions of another. Meanwhile, the concept of **checks and balances** allows the branches to impose certain limits on the powers of one another to prevent the misuse or abuse of authority and power. The constitution has established lawful means by which one branch is able to check on the actions of another. One example is the presidential veto where the chief executive is able to disapprove a law or a part of a law and return it to Congress for review. The Congress, on the other hand, can overrule the veto by means of a vote of approval of 2/3 of Congress. Congress also has the authority to review and approve all presidential appointments, including cabinet officials, heads of agencies, and justices of the Supreme Court. The Philippine Senate, meanwhile, also has the authority to review and approve international treaties entered into by the government.

Lastly, the judiciary branch has the power of review where it can declare laws, policies, and actions of government officials and institutions as unconstitutional.

Governance Explained

Once a government is deemed functional, governance follows. **Governance** refers to the process by which laws and policies are enacted by the government through the implementation of programs that uphold the general welfare. Governance also refers to how the various institutions of government, from the local to the national level, work together to successfully implement government policies and programs.

It is through governance that a government is able to have a direct and significant impact on the lives of its citizens. In this regard, good governance in the Philippines is indicated in recent times by key components such as sound financial management, environmental management, social security, peace and order, disaster preparedness, access to services and information, and a competitive and business-friendly economy. These components are significant both at the national and local government levels. For ordinary Filipinos, the most important indicators of good governance are visible and useful infrastructure, fast and efficient government services, peace and order, and transparent and honest government transactions.

Political Science in the Real World

Analyzing and Understanding Politics and Governance

Political scientists endeavor to use the concepts, theories, and ideals related to politics and governance in analyzing and understanding society. They use various theories and perspectives to look into political events and government activities. They also look into how political institutions relate to one another at the local, national, regional, and international levels. Of primary importance for political scientists is the use of theories and views in addressing political issues and improving governance.

Political scientists use various methods of inquiry when looking into political phenomena. Like the other social sciences, political science relies primarily on theories which form the foundation of political inquiry and analysis. The principles and assumptions put forth by political theories form the basis of the perspectives that analysts adopt when looking into political issues. For example, conflict theory claims that society is defined by inequality and that it is composed of groups or social classes that often come into conflict with each other. Conflict theorists, when looking at political events or other social phenomenon, tend to emphasize the element of social conflict. Poverty, for instance, is considered by conflict theorists as a product of unequal distribution of resources that favor the powerful and influential social groups. The majority of the members of society who are not in positions of privilege or power, therefore, are victims of an unequal system that is perpetrated by the social and political elite. Another perspective, structural-functionalism, considers political systems as highly ordered, stable systems whose various aspects contribute to the prevailing

order and help maintain the stability of society and the state. Analysts who adhere to this perspective look into how poverty defines the condition of society and what positive or negative things are brought about by this phenomenon in society.

Political analysis and inquiry strive to make sense of sociopolitical phenomenon and gain valuable information and insights that can be used in governance, particularly in policy making. When conducting their queries and analysis, political scientists and analysts combine the varied views, concepts, and theories into a paradigm. **Paradigm** refers to the collected ideas and theories regarding a certain phenomenon. It provides analysts a background or framework that will become the basis of their initial ideas and hypotheses. Examples of paradigms include political ideologies, religious beliefs, and even one's personal beliefs regarding society and politics. In embarking on political inquiries on a certain political phenomenon, one must discover the paradigms that discuss it and influence the development of ideas regarding that phenomenon. One must also be aware of personal paradigms or views regarding the issue being analyzed in order to maintain a balanced view on the topic.

Formal academic study into politics is primarily based on established research methods in the social sciences. **Quantitative methods** rely heavily on statistics and hard data which scientists analyze to discover information regarding a certain political phenomenon. Examples of quantitative research are analysis of changes in approval ratings of public officials, determination of voter behavior through exit polling, and evaluation of the effectiveness of crime prevention through crime statistics. In the social sciences, surveys are important sources of statistical data for quantitative research. **Qualitative methods** of research, meanwhile, look beyond the numbers and endeavor to provide a descriptive account of the political phenomenon. Data gathering methods for this type of research include participant observation, interviews, and focus group discussions.

Majority of political science inquiries and research combine quantitative and qualitative methods in their data collection. These studies also apply a **multidisciplinary approach** in their inquiries, using various tools, methods, theories, and paradigms from other social sciences such as history, psychology, sociology, economics, and anthropology. Political scientists apply a rigorous method in selecting theories and paradigms, choosing and implementing their methodology, and analyzing the data gathered in order to come up with an accurate view of the political phenomenon being studied.

Applying our Knowledge to “Real Politics”

The study of politics provides us with a view of the principles and ideals that influence the development of politics and governance through the centuries. Many of these ideals, however, are rendered imperfectly in the real world.

As citizens, we are aware of the ideals that our government and officials must live up to. “Real life politics,” however, shows us that certain actions by governments and individual politicians do not necessarily conform to what we consider as ideal behavior. We often hear

news reports on politicians accused of unethical and illegal actions, of government workers and members of the police allegedly abusing authority and are inefficient. Graft and corruption have become popular bywords that characterize Philippine politics and governance at present. This friction between the ideal and the real is best exemplified by the notion of ***realpolitik*** – which is politics that is primarily driven by the current needs, circumstances, or the prevailing reality in the state, instead of political ideals and moral and ethical standards. In its most negative sense, *realpolitik* pertains to politics that uses force and violates moral standards to achieve its goals. Conventional ideas regarding politics often emphasize power, access to services and opportunities, and control over resources, particularly money.

Other perspectives that offer descriptions of regarding real-life politics include **political realism**, which believes that politics is defined by conflicting interests among individuals and groups as they compete for power in government and society. This perspective believes that politics is a continuous struggle among people with varied interests and needs. **Complex interdependence**, meanwhile, is a perspective which believes that societies, governments, and states are all linked together through economic and political activities. The relationships established among individuals and groups play an important role in defining the characteristics of government. **Global justice**, on the other hand, believes that inequality is a reality. However, it also stresses that it is the role of government to address inequality and other social issues, and promote human dignity, justice, equality, and adherence to the law. These three views enable us evaluate more critically the various activities and structures that define our government.

It is important for citizens to have an understanding of how government works, as well as an awareness of its various limitations and problems. Issues such as bribery, graft and corruption, inefficient public service, poverty, crime, and other social problems are indications of the limitations of government. Political scientists work to identify and define political issues in the hope that a solution may be identified to address them. As citizens, it is our responsibility to participate in the discussion of political issues to clarify, define, and make sense of the political problems we face. Having adequate information regarding government and governance will enable us to work together to formulate plans and programs that will engage the government in addressing its limitations and, in the long run, uphold good government and effective governance.

RECALL

- Politics is commonly described as the process that determines the distribution of power and resources. Political science is the study of politics and government, and deals with the analysis of political activities, political behavior, and political theories and practices.
- Political science is divided into several branches that include political theory, comparative politics, public administration, international relations, public law, and political methodology. Political scientists seek to describe and analyze political phenomenon and propose recommendations to address certain political issues.
- Important terms in the study of politics include state, government, governance, and ideology. The state refers to a political entity composed of a population occupying a specific territory and has a government and sovereignty. Government refers to the organization or institution authorized to control and administer the state. Governance refers to the activities and processes related to governing and addressing collective problems. Ideology refers to the set of theories that a government follows.
- Political science has its roots from ancient philosophy. Greek philosophers were among the first to discuss and ponder on the concepts of government, leadership, and citizenship. Later thinkers focused on analyzing political structures and the behavior of leaders. During the Age of Enlightenment, political philosophers advocated the concept of the social contract in their discussion of society and governance. Political science emerged as a formal academic discipline during the late nineteenth century when universities introduced it as a formal course.
- There are various forms and types of government. The classical types of government include monarchy, oligarchy, and democracy. Democracy has two types: direct democracy and representative or republican democracy. Modern states currently adopt various forms and systems of government such as the presidential system, parliamentary system, presidential-parliamentary system, and the federal government.
- A government is established through a constitution, which is a set of basic laws and principles governing a state and defining its government. Government officials come to power through various means. Elections are the conventional means by which officials are elected into office. Other unconventional means of establishing a government include a military coup, revolution, and foreign occupation.
- The three main branches of government are the executive, legislative, and judicial branches. Each branch has a specific function and responsibility and their interactions are governed by the principles of separation of powers and checks and balances.
- It is through governance that the government is able to have a direct and significant impact on the lives of citizens. This is done through the enactment of laws and policies and the implementation of programs that promote the general welfare.

- Political inquiry is primarily done through the use of theories and methodology. Political theories and perspectives give rise to paradigms or models that are used as bases for the analysis of political phenomena. Quantitative and qualitative research methods provide valuable information to political scientists that help them make sense of political phenomena. Political inquiries and studies adopt a multidisciplinary approach and use theories, paradigms, tools, and methods from the other social sciences.
- It is important for citizens to have an understanding of their government and an awareness of its limitations and the challenges it faces. Political science provides us the tools and perspectives that help us understand the structures, methods, and processes of governance and come up with solutions to the limitations and challenges that our government faces.

EXAMINE

A. Identify the following. Write the answers in the blanks provided.

- _____ 1. The process that determines the distribution of power and resources.
- _____ 2. The branch of the social sciences that deals with systems of government, and analysis of political activity.
- _____ 3. An organized political community living under one government.
- _____ 4. The system that administers or controls the state, and is the instrument through which the will of the state is made known and implemented.
- _____ 5. It refers to all actions and activities related to governing.
- _____ 6. A set of ideas and beliefs that define the views and actions of individuals, groups, and institutions.
- _____ 7. This is a government ruled by a single person.
- _____ 8. This is the rule of a small group of people.
- _____ 9. This government is defined by the direct participation of citizens in all government activities.
- _____ 10. In this government, the citizens elect officials who will defend their interests.

B. Answer the following questions. Write your answer in the space provided.

1. How does political science make sense of political events and phenomena? What tools and methods are employed in political inquiry?

2. What changes and developments led to the emergence of political science as a formal academic discipline?

3. What major political thoughts have emerged since the ancient times until the present? How are these relevant to our study of politics and governance?

4. What are the means by which a government is established and organized? Which of these means give rise to a more stable government?

5. How can our knowledge of politics and governance help us become effective citizens?

ANALYZE

Form a group of five members. Read and discuss the selection below.

14 LGUs get Seal of Good Local Governance Award

SANTIAGO CITY, August 25 (PIA) – At least 14 local government units (LGUs) in Cagayan Valley region are among the recipients of the Department of the Interior and Local Government's (DILG) Good Financial Housekeeping (GFH) award, a component of the much-coveted 2014 Seal of Good Local Governance (SGLG) award.

Marlo Iringan, regional director, said the GFH is conferred to an LGU for its adherence to the Full Disclosure Policy and the good practices of accountability and transparency.

He said that apart from the GFH, the core components of the Seal of Good Local Governance are "Disaster Preparedness" which looks into the preparation for the

challenges posed by natural and man-made disasters and “Social Protection,” which focuses LGU sensitivity to the needs of vulnerable and marginalized sectors of society.

He said that other assessment areas are “Business-Friendliness and Competitiveness, “Peace and Order”, and “Environmental Management.”

“In order to become a recipient of the Seal of Good Governance, an LGU needs to pass all the three core areas and at least one from the other assessment areas,” the director said.

This year’s SGLG awardees for the municipality and city categories are the towns of Sanchez Mira, Sta. Praxedes and Claveria in Cagayan; Angadanan, San Mateo and Santiago City in Isabela; Alfonso Castaneda, Ambaguio, Kasibu and Villaverde in Nueva Vizcaya; and Aglipay and Saguday in Quirino.

For the provincial category, Quirino and Isabela provinces were awarded each a Seal of Good Local Governance.

Aside from being conferred with the SGLG, Iringan said that recipient-LGUs are also entitled to a package of incentives and access to other national performance-based programs.

“We will still provide capacity development interventions for those LGUs who do not earn the SGLG,” he said.

He added that the SGLG, which originated from the Seal of Good Housekeeping program in 2010 as initiated by late DILG Secretary Jesse Robredo, is introduced to provide greater challenge to the local governments to continue good governance practices while providing better services.

SOURCE: Edale, Merlito Jr. “14 LGUs get Seal of Good Local Governance award”. August 28, 2015.
<http://news.pia.gov.ph/article/view/481440469293/14-lgus-get-seal-of-good-local-governance-award>

Discussion Questions

1. What is the purpose of awarding the “Seal of Good Governance Award”?
2. What are the bases for identifying the local government units that will be given the award?
3. Do you think that the criteria for the award adequately cover the essential aspects of good governance? Why?
4. If you were to propose an additional criterion for the award, what would it be and why?

EMPOWER

- A. Look for an article discussing an example of good governance in the Philippines overseas. Share and discuss it in class.**
- B. Research on the local government in your barangay. Identify the officials and describe their roles in governing your community. Look into how your barangay officials work with other community members in ensuring the general welfare of the community. Report your findings in class.**
- C. Identify a significant problem in your barangay that needs to be addressed by your local government. Write a letter to your barangay officials describing this problem and offering possible solutions to it.**
- D. Invite a political scientist, political analyst, or a political researcher to class. Inquire into the nature of their study and how their inquiries contribute to society. Ask them about their thoughts on how citizens can participate in governance.**

Lesson 2

POWER AND ACCOUNTABILITY

ENGAGE

Power is an important concept in understanding politics and governance. Government is understood to have authority and power over the people, and its various actions bear great influence in people's lives and society in general. Various societies, countries, and governments implement different means in utilizing power, and these means define their respective cultures, traditions, and prevailing political structures. Democratic societies believe that true power lies among the people, and that it is by the consent of the people that the government is able to exercise great power. Political power, therefore, is subject to certain limits and checks. The right to occupy positions of authority and power in government is a public trust, and the people have the right to hold officials accountable for their actions. This relationship between the government and its citizens ensures that power is exercised responsibly, and that no abuses shall be committed by those entrusted by the people to wield power. In turn, the government respects the right of the citizens to exercise power in reasonable ways.

At the end of the lesson, students are expected to answer the following questions:

1. How is power expressed in government and governance?
2. How does power define relations between the government and its citizens?
3. What are the various ways government expresses its power?
4. What factors influence the effective exercise of power by the government?
5. How does the government ensure that it exercises power in a responsible manner?

DISCUSS

The Nature and Dimensions of Power

Power is generally defined as the ability of a person to carry out his or her will. This concept is particularly significant in the study of social relationships since society is composed of individuals who exercise varied degrees of power. In politics, power refers to the ability to exercise control or impose restrictions over individuals, as well as compel

other people to do certain tasks. Power is closely tied to the concept of **authority**, which is the right to exercise power in society.

Social psychologists John French and Bertram Raven view power as based on the perception and understanding of the various participants in society. Each member of a group or society recognizes that certain individuals in their group possess a degree of power based on the nature of their relationships with other members of the group. Power, therefore, could be classified according to several bases. **Coercive power** is based on a person's ability to compel other people through threats, punishment, and force. **Reward power** is based on the ability to give rewards and benefits. **Expert power** relies on the knowledge and skills of the individual. **Legitimate power** is based on a person's position, role, and duties in a group. Finally, **referent power** is based on an individual's personality and ability to attract followers.

Max Weber, a German sociologist and philosopher, proposed a classification of power based on different types of authority. **Charismatic authority** is based on the personal qualities of the individual who wields power. The person's authority is recognized based on his or her traits and how he or she is perceived by other people in society. **Traditional authority** is rooted in traditional values and existing social ties and institutions. An example of people who wield traditional power are monarchs and members of royal families. In the Philippines, many of the political and social elite are perceived to have power and authority because they belong to political families who have ruled for generations. **Legal-rational authority** is based on a system of laws and regulations, and an established bureaucracy. A person is able to exercise power because he or she has been empowered by law. Power, in this context, depends on an individual's position in the social hierarchy, and the roles and responsibilities that come with this position.

Another significant concept in the discussion of power is **influence**. This refers to the ability to entice or convince through persuasion and other non-coercive means. Influence is considered to have a broader scope compared to power and is more democratic in nature. However, the use of influence often has uncertain consequences and is thus considered less effective compared to the exercise of power. The wise and balanced use of influence and power, however, prevents conflict and ensures harmony within society. Power also plays an important role in **leadership**. Leaders exercise various forms of power in order to guide people in an organization and lead them in the conduct of various tasks.

Power, Legitimacy, and the Government

In politics, the concept of power is closely related to the state, government, governance, and citizenship. Political power is understood to refer to **sovereignty** which is the power of the government to perform its functions and conduct its affairs without interference from outside forces. Sovereignty also refers to the authority to exercise control over a group or society. In ancient times, rulers and leaders were believed to possess sovereignty and could

therefore command the respect and obedience of their subjects. The Age of Enlightenment, however, redefined sovereignty in the context of the “social contract.” Social philosophers of the Enlightenment advanced the idea that sovereignty resides in the individuals that compose society. This became the basis for the democratic ideal of a government “of the people, by the people, and for the people.”

Citizens in a democratic society express their sovereignty through various means. The ancient Greeks directly exercised sovereignty through participation in a direct democracy. Greek citizens could participate in assemblies, discuss important issues, and decide upon appropriate courses of action. Modern states, meanwhile, govern through a representative democracy where citizens do not directly run the government. Instead, they have the power to select among themselves individuals who shall serve as their representatives in the government. Elections, therefore, become the means by which citizens are able to exercise sovereignty in a democratic society. There are, however, other means by which citizens are able to participate in or influence government affairs. Some examples include people’s initiative, plebiscite, referendum, and the organization of advocacy groups.

Authority within a political context is closely tied to the concept of **legitimacy**, which is the acceptance or recognition of the right to exercise power. Legitimacy is generally based on existing laws, customs, and traditions that are prevalent in a certain society. It is also based on the exercise of certain activities that are recognized to lend legitimacy to a government or a group of leaders. Examples of these are elections or the formulation of a constitution or organic laws. Therefore, it may be possible for a political leader to exercise authority in government without legitimacy. After the 1986 elections, Ferdinand E. Marcos claimed victory based on the results of the COMELEC vote count. Many citizens, however, questioned the validity of the election results due to widespread reports and evidence of cheating at the polls. The political opposition, therefore, claimed that President Marcos lost legitimacy because of widespread electoral fraud. This paved the way for the 1986 People Power Revolution which resulted in the collapse of the Marcos government. A new government was established with Mrs. Corazon Aquino as the new president. The Aquino administration, however, also lacked legitimacy as it was established through a popular revolt. The new government, therefore, took steps to ensure that it will be recognized as a legitimate government. It initially formulated a “freedom constitution” which established a revolutionary government and allowed President Aquino to perform executive and legislative functions. The government also took steps to establish a new democratic government by organizing a constitutional commission to draft a new constitution. This resulted in the 1987 Philippine Constitution which took effect upon its ratification by the citizens in a plebiscite. At present, the 1987 constitution is the primary basis by which government officials and leaders claim legitimacy of the government.

Whatever the form of government that is implemented in a state, democracy assumes that the elected representatives in the government and the appointed officials borrow power from the sovereign people. The exercise of political power, therefore, is subject to limitations.

Once an official finishes his or her term of office, he or she loses the power to govern. Even when in power, government officials do not wield all the powers of the state. Each government branch and its officials are subject to reasonable limitations and controls with regard to the use of their respective powers while in office.

Other forms of government, meanwhile, have their own means of determining who exercises sovereignty. Traditional monarchical states consider the monarch as the legitimate ruler and head of government who exercises most powers of government. Constitutional monarchies, on the other hand, set limits on the authority of the monarch. Modern constitutional monarchies recognize the monarch as a legitimate ruler, but his or her role is limited to being a “head of state” or a symbolic representative of the nation with little or no actual power in government. The power to run the government resides in the parliament, which is headed by the prime minister. The elected official who performs the leadership role in the government, such as the Prime Minister and the President, is designated the “head of government” and is tasked with the day-to-day operations of the government. The Philippine Constitution recognizes the President as both head of state and head of government who performs both actual and symbolic duties for the state.

Power and Governance

The government, being the instrument by which the people enacts its will, is empowered to enact programs, initiate activities, and take action whenever the need arises. In this sense, sovereignty is expressed by the government as a form of “national power” that is composed of various resources and instrumentalities such as the economy, population, and the military. National power is evident in the actions of government agencies, officials, members of the military and police, and other public servants.

The constitution gives the government inherent powers that it can enact in pursuit of national goals and objectives. **Police power** refers to the ability of the state to use the police force to ensure law and order in society. **Eminent domain** is the power of the government to acquire private property for public use. The **power of taxation** allows the government to impose and collect taxes from its citizens. These powers enable the government to undertake its activities as well as ensure the safety of citizens.

The government also employs other means to exert control over its citizens or influence groups and communities in the country. Laws and regulations implemented by the state often compel citizens to perform certain actions or impose prohibitions that limit individual behavior. The government requires its citizens to pay proper taxes on time and imposes penalties on those who fail to perform this obligation. Certain actions, such as assault, robbery, and murder, are considered crimes by the government and are declared as such by laws. Citizens who commit crimes face the full power of the state as they are subject to arrest, incarceration, and are given appropriate punishment.

The state may also express its power in less evident ways such as indoctrination or propaganda. These may be implemented through various institutions such as schools, churches, and the media. Democratic states often resort to these means to influence the views and opinions of its citizens, as well as emphasize certain policies, traditions, and values that they consider vital in their respective societies. The Philippine government, for instance, endeavors to emphasize pride in the Filipino identity and therefore identifies certain cultural traits that they consider important such as love for family and respect for elders. It also identifies certain objects, values, and traditions as significant aspects of Filipino identity. These are exposed in media, recognized by laws, and practiced in communities. The National Anthem and *Panatang Makabayan* are examples of cultural items that have gained state recognition and support, and are seen as important instruments by which the state expresses the Filipino identity as well as significant national goals and cultural values. Totalitarian states like North Korea, however, use indoctrination and propaganda to impose certain views and beliefs on its citizens in order to establish full control over their thoughts and actions.

In regional and international politics, states also exercise certain forms of power as they interact with each other. These include military power, economic power, and psychological power. **Military power** refers to the capability of a state to wage war against another state, and is evident in resources such as military troops and weapons. **Economic power** refers to the use of economic resources and finances, and the ability of states to influence other nations by denying or giving them access to certain resources. **Psychological power** refers to the ability of a state to use its image or reputation in influencing other countries. This power requires the wise use of diplomacy, propaganda, and mass media to successfully achieve the goals of the state.

Power and Citizenship

Power and citizenship are two closely intertwined concepts within the context of a democratic society. As sovereignty resides in the people that compose the state, the government provides the people with the means to exercise power. The recognition of the sovereign citizens is evident in the rights and privileges guaranteed by the state. The Bill of Rights (Article III of the 1987 Philippine Constitution) enumerates the various political, social, and economic rights that citizens enjoy. These rights, in turn, come with a set of responsibilities which citizens must fulfill in order to exercise power and participate fully within a democracy. For example, Filipinos have the right to free speech and expression. This right, however, imposes the responsibility to be aware of social issues, engage in critical discussions and debate, and express concern regarding pressing issues. Citizens who ignore these responsibilities are unable to fully enjoy these rights. Also, irresponsible exercise of the right to free speech such as spreading misinformation, engaging in hate speech, and advocating violence, undermines democracy and good governance. The exercise of citizen power, therefore, becomes effective if done in a responsible manner.

The concept of citizenship has also influenced views on the powers wielded by citizens. The first concept of citizenship that took shape in the 18th century was **civil citizenship**, which focused on individual freedoms and rights. **Political citizenship** emerged in the 19th century and emphasized participation and exercise of political power by citizens. The most recent concept of citizenship which emerged in the 20th century was **social citizenship**. This focused on economic, cultural and social well-being and set standards that must be enjoyed by all citizens. These concepts come together in defining the rights and responsibilities of each citizen.

The state has instituted formal means by which citizens are able to directly participate in government. These include suffrage, referendum, plebiscite, and initiatives. **Suffrage** is the power of citizens that enables them to vote in public elections and also run for public office. During elections, people exercise their power to choose public officials by casting their ballots. A **referendum** is similar to an election but instead of electing officials, citizens vote for or against a proposal or law. These may include approval of certain local laws or laws passed by Congress. A **plebiscite** refers to the process by which citizens approve of proposed changes to the constitution. Finally, an **initiative** is a process by which citizens directly propose laws or amendments to the Constitution.

Citizen participation in the political process is primarily driven by **advocacy**. This is the process by which individuals or groups seek to influence decisions or implement change within institutions, societies, social and economic systems, and governments. Advocacy requires citizens to be educated and well-informed about issues in politics and society, and to be actively involved in actions and initiatives that will advance the issues and concerns they advocate. Many political scientists consider advocacy-building and active involvement of citizens as a solution to the often unequal balance of power in many governments. Effective citizens are empowered, and they have the ability to engage in advocacies and organize themselves to pursue their goals.

Other unconventional means by which citizens are able to directly influence politics include **popular revolt**. Early forms of revolts and armed rebellions were often violent and involved citizens engaging government forces in hostilities. During the 20th century, however, a number of popular revolts have utilized peaceful means to advance their respective political causes. During the Indian independence movement in the 1920s, Mahatma Gandhi led the non-violent resistance against British colonial rule. He advocated non-cooperation, the boycott of foreign products, and civil disobedience. During the Martial Law Period in the Philippines, opponents of the Marcos regime also engaged in non-violent protests that led to the 1986 EDSA Revolution. In reaction to the widespread electoral fraud during the 1986 elections, Corazon Aquino called on Filipinos to engage in civil disobedience and boycott companies owned by Marcos cronies. These actions culminated in the gathering of civilians along EDSA to act as a human barricade between government troops and the rebel soldiers. There was very little violence during the 1986 EDSA Revolution that brought about the change in Philippine government. But not all peaceful mass actions result in success. In 1989, student activists led a mass demonstration

in Tiananmen Square in the Chinese capital of Beijing to push for democratic reforms in the Chinese government. However, the government responded with violence, and used the military to disperse the demonstrators resulting in the death of hundreds and the arrest of pro-democracy activists.

Power and its Effects

Power, when wielded by entities such as the state, often yields significant effects on society. The exercise of political power is primarily intended to ensure social control. This generally results in government influencing the development of individuals in society, as well as group behavior and identity. Democratic governments utilize their power to uphold democratic ideals and institutions, and inculcate a democratic mindset among the citizens. Within groups and organizations, the exercise of various forms of power by their members results in a well-defined hierarchy that enables them to identify their individual roles, responsibilities, privileges, and rights within the group. A well-balanced power structure within an organization contributes to its stability and efficiency.

However, irresponsible use of power limits individual freedom and imposes restrictions to citizens' actions. A government that ignores lawful limits on its powers is bound to violate the rights and freedoms of its citizens. Misuse of power by the government eventually leads to loss of legitimacy, especially if the citizens consider government actions as violations of democratic ideals and the general welfare. This leads to wider dissent among citizens who resort to rebellion or terrorism which in turn brings about instability in government and society. Many totalitarian states have successfully used the full power of the state to stamp out dissent among its citizens and have retained power for a long time.

Responsibility and Accountability

Since the exercise of political power by the government originates from the consent of the citizens, government action should be defined by responsibility and accountability. Responsibility is closely tied to **obligation**, which refers to an action that an individual is required to perform. **Accountability** refers to the acknowledgement of responsibility for an action and its consequences. Public officials, in particular, are expected to uphold various responsibilities in exercising their authority. They have **legal responsibilities**, which refer to a set of obligations outlined by law, and **moral responsibilities**, which refers to doing actions that are considered to be morally and socially acceptable and deserving of praise.

Responsibility and accountability are significant concepts in governance. Elected public officials are expected to perform the obligations of the offices they occupy. Local officials are responsible for maintaining law and order, and promoting the interests of the people within their respective jurisdictions. Members of congress are expected to create laws that will uphold the common good. The president, as head of the executive branch, is tasked to uphold

the Philippine Constitution, implement the laws of the country, and effectively administer government services.

There are various ways that power can be abused by public officials and leaders. **Abuse of authority** refers to the use of authorized power for illegal acts or stepping beyond the bounds of authorized action. The use of excessive force by police in arresting a suspect may be considered an abuse of authority. **Abuse of discretion** is the willful disregard for the rules or proper procedure. This can be seen in instances where public officials ignore protocols or standard procedures in hiring employees or procuring materials. **Abuse of power** pertains to misconduct in office, where an official performs unlawful actions while in office.

The most evident example of abuse of power in government is **corruption**, which is the use of authority or influence for private interest. Corruption is seen in various acts or activities such as patronage, nepotism, bribery, and influence peddling. **Graft** is a form of political corruption where an official uses public funds for his or her personal gain. In the Philippines, graft and corruption permeates almost every branch of government. Many officials commit various types of abuses in order to enrich themselves, give favors to family members and friends, or cater to private interests.

In these cases, the government has instituted various means to ensure that public officials who violate the public trust are held accountable for their actions. Accountability is ensured through constitutionally and legally mandated bodies or agencies that investigate cases of abuse of power and graft and corruption in public offices. Article XI of the 1987 Constitution defines the means by which public officials are to be held accountable in the conduct of their duties. The constitution mandates the establishment of the **Office of the Ombudsman** to investigate cases of alleged abuses by public officials and government employees. The Ombudsman is empowered to investigate cases of alleged abuse, suspend officials under investigation, and recommend cases for prosecution after due investigation. The country's anti-graft court, the **Sandiganbayan**, is empowered to hear and decide on cases involving graft and corruption and abuse of power by public officials.

There are other related agencies that address cases of abuse of power and graft and corruption in government. The **Presidential Commission on Good Government (PCGG)** was originally established to recover the ill-gotten wealth of former President Ferdinand E. Marcos, his family members, relatives, and business associates. The commission is also tasked with investigating cases of graft and corruption and formulating safeguards to ensure that corrupt practices in government are prevented. The **Commission on Human Rights** is empowered to investigate cases of violations of civil and political rights and to look into cases of police and military abuse, extrajudicial killings, enforced disappearances, and abuse of prisoners or persons held in jails. The **Commission on Audit** is tasked with reviewing expenditures of government offices and agencies to ensure that public funds are used properly. It also has the power to disallow improper expenditures or use of government properties. The Philippine Congress has also instituted a **Senate Committee on Accountability of Public Officers and Investigations**, also known as the "Blue Ribbon Committee", to investigate alleged wrongdoings

of government, its officials, and agencies for the purpose of drafting new laws or amending existing laws to address the problem of abuse and corruption in government.

Another important factor that ensures responsibility and accountability in government is transparency and easy access to information. Article XI of the Constitution also states that all public officials and employees must issue a **statement of assets, liabilities, and net worth (SALN)**. Information regarding the assets, liabilities, and worth of high-ranking officials, including the President, Vice-President, members of the Cabinet, the Congress, Supreme Court, Constitutional Commissions and Offices, and officers of the armed forces shall be disclosed to the public. The media is also an important institution that ensures the timely discussion of events and issues that are significant to the government. Many cases of government corruption and abuse are often uncovered by the media and it is through their efforts and coordination with the government that many cases of government misconduct are addressed.

RECALL

- Power is defined as the ability of an individual to carry out his or her will. In politics, power refers to the ability to exercise control over individuals and compel people to do certain tasks.
- There are various forms of power according to its bases. Coercive power is based on a person's ability to compel people through threats, punishment, and force. Reward power is based on a person's ability to give rewards and benefits. Expert power relies on knowledge and skills. Legitimate power is based on position, role, and duty. Referent power is based on a person's personality and ability to attract followers.
- Authority is the right to exercise power in society. Power can also be classified based on the different types of authority. Charismatic authority is based on personal qualities, traditional authority is based on tradition and existing social ties, and legal-rational authority is based on laws and regulations.
- Political power is understood to refer to sovereignty, which is the power of the government to perform its functions and conduct its affairs without interference. In a democratic government, sovereignty resides in the people. Elected government officials borrow power from the sovereign people.
- Legitimacy refers to the acceptance or recognition of the right to exercise power. The legitimate exercise of power in politics is based on existing laws, customs, tradition, and the exercise of certain activities.

- The exercise of sovereignty by the government is subject to reasonable limitations and controls. Elected officials can exercise power only while they are in office. The exercise of power by each government branch is also subject to checks and balances to ensure that each one exercises power within reasonable limits.
- The government exercises sovereignty through various means. The constitutionally-mandated powers of the government include police power, eminent domain, and the power of taxation. These powers enable the government to undertake its activities and ensure the welfare of citizens.
- The government exercises power through laws and regulations which compel citizens to undertake or refrain from certain acts. Other less evident means by which government exercises power include indoctrination and propaganda.
- In the regional and international scenes, states exercise various forms of power in pursuit of their respective interests. These include military power, economic power, and psychological power.
- Power, when exercised effectively and responsibly, leads to stability in government and society. The exercise of power by the government is intended to foster a democratic society, develop a democratic mindset among citizens, and maintain order that enables citizens to thrive and develop.
- Responsibility and accountability are important concepts to be considered in the exercise of political power. The government ensures accountability in the exercise of power through the establishment of agencies tasked to investigate cases of abuses of power and corruption in government, the institution of procedures and laws that define proper exercise of power, and close coordination with other social institutions to ensure responsible and transparent government activities.

EXAMINE

A. Identify the following. Write your answers in the blanks provided.

- _____ 1. This is defined as the ability of a person to carry out his or her will and to control or impose restrictions on other people.
- _____ 2. This is authority based on a person's traits and how he or she is perceived by other people.
- _____ 3. This is authority based on traditional values and social ties and institutions.
- _____ 4. This is authority based on laws, regulations, and a bureaucracy.

- _____ 5. This is the ability to entice or convince through persuasion and other non-coercive means.
- _____ 6. This refers to the acceptance or the recognition of the right to exercise power.
- _____ 7. This is the ability of the state to use the police force to ensure law and order.
- _____ 8. This is the power of the government to acquire private property for public use.
- _____ 9. This power allows government to impose and collect taxes from its citizens.
- _____ 10. This emphasizes participation and exercise of political power by citizens.

B. Answer the following questions. Write your answer in the space provided.

1. What is the relationship between legitimacy and political authority? Cite examples of legitimacy influencing the conduct of politics.

2. In what ways does the government implement its various national powers?

3. How does the exercise of national powers benefit the citizens?

4. What are the ways that the government ensures accountability among public officials?

5. What are the ways that government will be able to improve governance in terms of ensuring accountability?

Read and analyze the following selection. Answer the discussion questions that follow.

The Death of Islam Karimov and the Politics of Power in Uzbekistan

In September of 2016, reports of the death of Islam Karimov, President of Uzbekistan, has caused uncertainty in the former Soviet nation. Karimov ruled Uzbekistan as a virtual dictator for 25 years, and his death left a great political void in the Uzbek government.

Islam Karimov came to power during the 1980s as a high-ranking member of the Communist Party of Uzbekistan. In 1989, he was elected as First Secretary of the Communist Party of Uzbekistan and then later elected President of Uzbekistan in 1990. When the Soviet Union fell in 1991, Karimov declared the independence of Uzbekistan. In December of that year, he ran in the first democratic elections in the country and won with a large majority of votes cast in his favor.

Karimov's government was characterized by authoritarian rule. In 1996, he initiated a referendum to extend his rule until 2000 – a move that was widely criticized. Karimov easily won the 2000 elections, winning almost 90% of the vote. However, international observers criticized the conduct of the elections, as it was not considered free and fair. Soon after, Karimov instituted restrictive policies limiting the activities of political parties opposed to his government. Subsequent elections have been criticized by the international community for being manipulated to favor Karimov and his regime.

The Uzbek president soon gained reputation as a dictator who held on to power through the violent suppression of political opponents, use of state propaganda, media censorship, and widespread electoral fraud. The Uzbek president was widely criticized for his government's dismal human rights records. In particular, his violent suppression of suspected Muslim extremists led to accusations of human rights violations such as illegal arrests, torture, and religious suppression. The repressive policies of the Karimov regime was placed on international spotlight in 2005, after a violent dispersal of anti-government demonstrators in the city of Andijan. Hundreds of protesters were killed, with some reports putting the total to almost a thousand. There were also allegations that government troops were given orders by the government to use lethal force against the demonstrators, and that the violence was used by Karimov to suppress dissent throughout the country.

But despite the repressive character of his regime, Karimov's rule was relatively stable and he found a number of supporters in the international community. This was due to the fact that Uzbekistan occupies a strategic geographical location in Central Asia, and is considered a critical access point for Central Asian countries, as well as major regional powers such as Russia and China. Oil pipelines that provide energy to

Russia and China run through Uzbekistan, and the country is a leading provider of electricity for Afghanistan. The country also played a critical role in the war on terrorism and has allied with many western powers, particularly the United States, in curbing Islamic extremism. From 2001 to 2005, Uzbekistan allowed U.S. forces access to an air base in its southeastern region for their military operations in Afghanistan. However, when relations between the U.S. and Uzbekistan were strained because of the Andijan massacre in 2005, the Uzbek government expelled the American forces. Political analysts believed that Karimov's anti-Islamic stance and tough stand on terrorism was the reason why his repressive government was tolerated by Russia and the West. Uzbekistan is also among the world's leading producers of metals and minerals such as gold, copper, and uranium, and has a vast untapped reserve of oil and gas, making it a significant regional and global economic power.

But the Karimov regime was far from secure. Uzbekistan has experienced the most terror attacks, and many Uzbeks had joined terrorist organizations. Several militant groups with ties to either Al Qaeda or ISIS had surfaced in the country. The government was also plagued with corruption, and one famous scandal even involved Karimov's own daughter and supposed successor – Gulnara Karimova. As a result, Karimov placed her under house arrest and stripped her of any political power. Tight government control over the economy also resulted in limited growth during the 1990s, but the easing of restrictions in trade and finances had resulted in positive economic gains since 2000. Uzbekistan's human rights record, however, remained one of the poorest in the world. Its cotton industry, which is one the largest in the world, faced accusations of employing slave labor, forcing farmers and even children to plant and harvest cotton. Torture was widespread in prisons. Religious freedom was also limited, with Muslims and Christians experiencing persecution for practicing their faith. The government also imposed restrictions on Internet use by its citizens, and critics were often tracked and arrested.

In August of 2016, reports circulated that Karimov was hospitalized after suffering a stroke. The government, however, did not release any information regarding his health. The confirmation of his death finally came on September 2, 2016 and the news resulted in fears of instability in the country. Though political observers note that the government appears stable and that a smooth transition in leadership is likely, the country faces other threats. At present, Uzbekistan is considered a fertile recruiting ground for Islamic extremists due to the government's repressive policies and many fear that the government may be challenged by Islamic radical groups active in Central Asia.

SOURCES: 1) <https://www.rt.com/op-edge/358159-uzbekistan-ussr-karimov-us-russia/>;
2) <https://www.washingtonpost.com/news/monkey-cage/wp/2016/09/06/uzbekistan-had-the-same-president-for-25-years-what-happens-now/>; 3) <https://www.hrw.org/world-report/2016/country-chapters/uzbekistan>; 4) <http://www.timesca.com/index.php/news/26-opinion-head/16735-terrorism-in-central-asia-will-al-qaeda-take-control-over-uzbek-terror-movement>

Discussion Questions

1. What forms of power were used by Islam Karimov to establish and maintain his control over Uzbekistan?
2. Describe the ways the Uzbek government exercised its powers over its citizens. Is the use of government power in line with democratic ideals? Explain.
3. How did Uzbekistan employ its national power in its international relations? Do you believe it was effective?
4. What were the effects of the government's use of power? Do you believe that the citizens benefitted from it?
5. Why is Karimov's death considered a great challenge to Uzbek politics?
6. Do you believe Uzbekistan will have a smooth transition to a new government? Why?

EMPOWER

- A. Identify and describe the powers of your barangay officials. Determine how they use them to benefit your community. Identify also issues and concerns regarding power and accountability in your community. Make a report and present it in class.**
- B. Initiate an advocacy that you and your classmates can undertake in order to bring about positive change in your community. Research on significant issues and problems affecting your community and identify one which you feel you are able to address. Determine the means that you will be able to reach out and influence members of your community to participate in your advocacy. Prepare a plan of action and discuss it in class.**
- C. Research on one of the institutions empowered to ensure accountability in government. Identify their mandate, objectives, significant programs, and advocacies. Evaluate the agency's effectiveness in conducting its mission. Present a report detailing your findings and conclusions.**

Lesson 3

STATE, NATION, AND GLOBALIZATION

ENGAGE

The modern world is now more interconnected than ever, and individuals and societies often influence each other in various ways through constant political, economic, and cultural interactions. Globalization is an important development that continually shapes and defines various aspects of the modern world. The state and nation are two significant concepts that go hand-in-hand in understanding politics and governance within the context of globalization. Participating in global politics gives rise to various opportunities and challenges in the political, economic, and cultural arena, and a state must adequately rise to the global challenges and take advantage of opportunities that will bring about benefits for its people.

At the end of the lesson, students are expected to answer the following questions:

1. What is the significance of the state in the study of politics and governance?
2. What elements define the nature of the state?
3. What is nationhood and how is it related to the state?
4. How does nationhood influence politics and governance?
5. How does globalization influence world politics, economics, and culture?
6. How does globalization impact regional, global, and national politics?

DISCUSS

Defining the State

The term **state** refers to the political structure of an organized community that lives under a government. The state is related to but is not synonymous to **government** and **country**, which refer to elements that compose the state. The state is often combined with the concept of the nation, which gives rise to the concept of the **nation state**.

The state is considered the highest form of human association, and it is the product of man's basic desire for survival and the attainment of wants and needs. The state is considered by Enlightenment philosophers such as Thomas Hobbes, John Locke, and Jean

Jacques Rousseau as a product of an established order brought about by human cooperation and agreement. The state is primarily an organization with a legal purpose which is to impose law and order to ensure the welfare of the people. It is this nature of the state that imbues it with the power to enact and enforce laws.

The state is considered a product of the interaction of its various elements, and cannot be reduced to a single institution such as the government. As citizens, we encounter aspects of the state in our everyday lives but it is most evident in the laws and regulations we live by and the public services we avail of. The state is also embodied by our public officials, members of the police and armed forces, and government officers and workers. Their actions as they conduct their duties and responsibilities are considered manifestations of the power of the state. The state is also embodied by symbols such as the flag, the national anthem, monuments, and other symbols used by the government.

The Elements of the State

The elements that compose the state are population, territory, government, and sovereignty. **Population** refers to the people that compose the state. Without the people, a state cannot exist. **Territory** refers to the place where the people that compose the state are located, and includes the land, natural resources and air space located within it. This is commonly referred to as a country, a geographic region recognized to be a distinct national entity. **Government** is the institution empowered by the people to control and administer the state. It is through the government that the will of the state is expressed and realized. **Sovereignty** is the ability of the state to conduct its affairs and enact its authority without interference from outside forces. Sovereignty has two aspects: **internal sovereignty** which refers to the ability of the state to govern and control its people and territory, and **external sovereignty** which is the freedom from outside influences or foreign intervention.

Sovereignty and the State

The sovereignty of the state is closely tied to legitimacy. The state gains legitimacy when it is recognized and respected by the people. The legitimacy of the state is most evident in the actions of the government and the citizen's reactions to it. When majority of the population accepts the government and follows its laws, then it can be said that the state is legitimate. If, however, a significant portion of the population expresses opposition to the state, then its legitimacy is questioned which gives rise to instability. Certain groups may lead a revolt against the government or a region within a state may attempt to assert its independence.

Another form of state legitimacy is recognition by other states or the community of nations. In international relations, countries recognize each other as possessing the essential elements of the state and being able to exercise sovereignty. This means that all states participating in regional and international relations are on equal footing when they relate with each other, and their representatives are afforded the respect and courtesy due to sovereign states.

A **sovereign state**, therefore, is free to pursue its interest and uphold its objectives and goals independently and without undue influence from other states. It is also free to decide its own affairs and cannot be forced by other states to adopt policies detrimental to its own welfare. A sovereign state is considered a unified, coherent, and organized entity that is able to effectively exercise the powers of state. If, however, a country experiences political upheavals such as a civil war or has a government that is considered illegitimate by the international community, its status as a sovereign state may be put into question and this may affect the standing of the state in international affairs.

The state can also be classified according to the legitimacy attached to its exercise of power. A ***de jure* state** is one that has legitimacy but cannot exercise sovereignty, while a ***de facto* state** is one that has no legitimacy but has sovereignty. During the Japanese Occupation of the Philippines from 1942 to 1945, a *de facto* state existed which was under the control of the occupying Japanese forces through the Second Republic or “puppet government” headed by President Jose Laurel. The Philippine state under the Japanese was only recognized by Japan and its allies, but not by the rest of the world. On the other hand, the government-in-exile led by Pres. Manuel L. Quezon and whose members lived in exile in the United States was recognized as the *de jure* state and enjoyed diplomatic relations with the Allies and the rest of the international community at that time.

Some states exercise limited sovereignty as part of a union or federation. An example is the United States of America, which is a federal republic of 50 states and various territories and possessions. Each of the 50 states of the U.S. has sovereignty concerning its internal affairs. Each state has its government – with a governor as head of the executive branch, a state legislature, and a state judiciary. States are also able to independently promulgate state laws and policies and enjoy autonomy in terms of policy-making, election of public officials, and even tax distribution. However, the federal government, which encompasses all the states in the union, has authority over military action and international relations, and the federal government has the authority to pass laws and implement policies which are applicable to all states. Malaysia is another federal state whose component states enjoy sovereignty within their respective territories but are under the over-all authority of a federal government.

Within regional and international relations, sovereign states may choose to limit some of their powers and interests when entering into agreements or treaties. For example, when the Philippines signed the military bases treaty with the United States in 1947, the Philippine government allowed American troops to enter the country and establish bases such as the Subic Bay Naval Base and Clark Air Field. For several decades, the United States exercised sovereignty within the bases, and the ability of the Philippine government to monitor and control activities within these bases was very limited. But sovereign states are still able to reassert their sovereignty within the framework of bilateral and multilateral relations. In 1991, during negotiations to extend the stay of American troops and their bases in the country, the Philippine Senate voted to reject the extension of the treaty.

The American forces, therefore, had to leave and the bases were turned over to the Philippine government.

Membership in international organizations also means that a sovereign state must comply with certain policies and regulations imposed by international agreements or conventions. For example, the Universal Declaration of Human Rights, which was adopted by the members of the United Nations in 1948, sets the standards on the recognition of human rights for all states. The Philippines is among those who ratified the Declaration, and therefore bound to abide by the principles outlined in it. Being a member of the United Nations, our government has incorporated the recognition of human rights as a fundamental principle in the constitution, and has created and implemented laws that uphold human rights. Another example is the General Agreement on Tariffs and Trades (GATT), which sets the guidelines in international trade, particularly in the setting of tariffs and the easing of restrictions on certain products. The GATT also established the World Trade Organization (World Trade Organization) that oversees the implementation of the agreement and the conduct of international trade. The Philippines is a signatory to the GATT and a member of the WTO, and therefore abides by the regulations set by the agreement and the decisions of the WTO.

Understanding Nationhood

A **nation** is a large group of people who share common characteristics such as language, traditions, and ethnicity. The people that comprise a nation also share a common culture and history. They also identify themselves as a distinct and unified group, with common interests and aspirations. In modern political discourse, the nation is considered a political and cultural entity and is often studied alongside the state.

The Emergence of Nationhood

The emergence of the nation is closely tied with the concept of identity and ethnicity. People primarily identify their belongingness to a local community based on ethnicity. This ethnic identity is determined by similarities in physical traits, language, traditions, and beliefs, among others. In the Philippines, many communities come together to form large ethnolinguistic groups such as the Tagalog, Ilocano, Bicolano, Hiligaynon, Waray, Tausug, or Maranaw. A Filipino primarily identifies with his or her ethnolinguistic group, and he or she feels a sense of belongingness or loyalty to this group. Over the centuries, the varied ethnolinguistic groups in our country have come together through common experiences, struggles, and aspirations, and have identified themselves as a single Filipino nation.

The historian Benedict Anderson describes the nation as “an imagined political community...[that is] both inherently limited and sovereign.” The nation is an imagined concept because it primarily exists in the mind. The sense of nationhood is considered an idea or feeling among like-minded individuals who share the same background and identity. The nation is considered to be limited in the sense that it is defined by certain limits such as

boundary and time. Nations often identify a certain territory as their domain, and nations throughout history have emerged, vanished, or assimilated with other nations. Sovereignty is an important aspect of the nation as it enables its members to work together to achieve their aspirations as a united community.

Achieving nationhood is a lengthy process. Cultural, historical, social, and political factors all come into play in the formation of a nation. One view of nation formation is that a nation is supposed to be homogenous where the people has a common history, language, and culture. This is evident in Japan where the Japanese people are defined by a distinct culture, society, and history. Another view, however, considers the nation as going beyond the state-bounded territories and sociocultural influences. The nation that emerges encompasses numerous ethnic, cultural, and political groups. This is the case of the United States whose population is composed of various ethnic and political groups. The nation, in this case, is still defined by common values and traditions, but there is the acceptance of diversity and recognition of differences among its members.

The concepts of nation and the state are concepts that are often discussed and analyzed together and this has given rise to the concept of the **nation state**. A state may emerge from a nation, as many of the unifying elements of the state are defined by the nation. This is the case of many European nations, whose emergence as states during the 18th century onwards was defined by cultural integration and the formation of distinct national identities. Many states throughout the world have a single national identity, and that identity is reinforced and further developed by the state through **nation building**. One example of nation building in the Philippines is Pres. Manuel L. Quezon's decision to create a national language for the Philippines in 1937. By virtue of an executive order, President Quezon identified Tagalog as the basis of a national language that will be developed and used by all citizens of the Philippines. This national language was later on called *Filipino*. States continually engage in nation-building activities in order to reinforce national identity and orient citizens to the traditions, values, and aspirations that define their state.

While a nation may be the core component of a state, some nations exist without states. The Kurdish people in the Middle East is an ethnic group located in a region that encompasses parts of Turkey, Iran, Iraq, and Syria. The Kurds consider themselves a nation but have not been able to establish a state because of opposition from the countries that form their homeland. The Kurdish region in northern Iraq, however, enjoys autonomy from the Iraqi government since the 1970s and may be considered a *de facto* state. Other nations exist beyond states, or may include several states within its scope. The Arab nation, for example, includes several nations in West Asia and North Africa. The Filipino nation, at present, is not merely confined to the Philippines, but also includes Filipino communities found in other countries throughout the world.

Nationhood and Politics

Nationhood is an integral part of politics as citizens work together and are united by the common cause arising from their shared identity. Nationhood is a source of political integrity that unites the people behind the state. Political leaders often appeal to a sense of nationhood to inspire citizen support for government initiatives. This is often seen during wars, when the state calls on its people to defend the motherland against enemies. Aspects of culture and society that define national identity, such as traditions and cultural values are also important tools that the state uses to reinforce state policies and government action. For example, the Filipino cultural value that regards family as a fundamental social institution is enshrined in the Philippine Constitution, and many state laws and policies reinforce this value. In regional and international relations, the state is seen as a representative of a particular nation. The actions and decisions of states as they interact with other states are often defined by the values and objectives rooted in their respective national identities.

On the other hand, national identities can also contribute to divisions within a state. This is most common particularly in multinational states. Varied ethnic, social, cultural, and political identities often give rise to conflicting interests and values, which can result to tensions and conflicts among citizens. The state can resolve these possible conflicts through continual nation-building which seeks to reiterate common values and redefine existing traditions to become more inclusive of other groups and identities.

Globalization and the Nation State

Globalization refers to the gradual process of political, economic, and cultural integration brought about by increased exchange of products, ideas, and technology throughout the world. Based on this definition, we can say that globalization as a process has been going on since ancient times, from the integration of nations into great empires such as the Roman Empire and the Tang Dynasty in China, to the emergence of global empires during the age of colonialism and imperialism. Modern globalization has various dimensions that include political cooperation and dialogue (**political globalization**), economic integration (**economic globalization**), and cultural exchange (**cultural globalization**).

During the 20th century, globalization was advanced by various political developments. In the 1920s, in a desire to promote peace and security in Europe and in the rest of the world, western governments spearheaded the creation of the League of Nations as a forum for diplomatic negotiations. In 1945, towards the end of the Second World War, members of the Allied Forces organized a global union of nation-states with the aim of preventing another global conflict. In 1948, the United Nations (UN) was founded with the goal of promoting global peace, cooperation, and dialogue among countries. The Philippines is one of the founding members of the UN. The emergence of **supranational organizations**

that adopt common policies for member states, and whose members surrender certain powers to higher authorities, is also another indication of globalization. Examples include regional organizations such as the Association of Southeast Asian Nations (ASEAN) and the European Union (EU), and institutions such as the International Criminal Court (ICC) in the Hague, Netherlands.

Political globalization is also concerned with security and military matters. Many of the current security threats we face are global in scope. Terrorism is a security concern that affects several states throughout the world. Other threats such as organized crime, the illegal drug trade, and human trafficking often operate in multiple countries and across borders. Military conflict, such as civil wars and armed conflict between states, also has regional and international effects. Addressing these global threats require action from regional and international organizations. For instance, the UN Security Council is tasked with leading the efforts in maintaining global peace and security. This is primarily done through peacekeeping, and the UN organizes and oversees various peacekeeping missions in places experiencing conflict of humanitarian crises. The North Atlantic Treaty Organization (NATO), composed of European nations and the United States, was originally established to defend against the threat of communism during the Cold War. Presently, NATO focuses on security concerns in Europe and has initiated military intervention during the Balkan Crisis in the 1990s, and most recently during the war on terrorism, assisting the United States in the wars in Afghanistan and Iraq.

The economic aspect of globalization is evident in the growing trade and financial relations among countries, and the reduction and removal of trade barriers such as tariffs and quotas. The establishment of regional trade blocs, common markets, and free trade areas is an indication of the growing tendency of states to pursue collective action in the realm of international trade and economics. Examples of these initiatives include the North American Free Trade Agreement (NAFTA), which established a North American trade bloc and free trade area that includes Canada, the United States of America, and Mexico. Another significant regional organization is the Asia-Pacific Economic Cooperation (APEC), a trade forum participated in by 21 countries located in the Pacific Rim.

The cultural aspect of globalization is evident in the transmission of ideas and the growth of multicultural societies throughout the world. Technology is an important factor in the rapid spread of knowledge and the has led to communities being exposed to varied ideas and cultures. People are now exposed to values and traditions from other cultures thereby diminishing cultural stereotypes and misconceptions. Globalization has also led to the spread of Western culture and values to many parts of the world. On the other hand, cultural globalization has also led to the revival of national pride and an appreciation of cultural identity due to the openness to diversity.

Globalization provides the nation state various opportunities for growth but, likewise, the increasingly complex relations among nations bring about various challenges. In political,

economic, and military concerns, the nation state must carefully balance national interests with global interests, and work together with various nations in addressing global concerns.

Globalized Politics: Opportunities and Challenges

Engaging in politics in a globalized world means that nation states must determine national interests that may be affected by global concerns. Sometimes, states often have to adopt policies to conform to regional and international concerns, even sacrificing national interests in recognition of larger global objectives. International agreements also impose certain actions on a state, and governments are enjoined to initiate programs in pursuit of the objectives of such agreements.

The supranational nature of globalization means that international organizations can impose their power over member states. The United Nations, for example, can impose trade sanctions on states that violate international laws such as human rights violations and continual testing of nuclear weapons. The sanctions on North Korea, for example, resulted in restrictions on trade and financial transactions for the North Korean government. The European Union and the United States also imposed economic sanctions on Russia during the Ukrainian Crisis of 2014. The sanctions targeted selected Russian and Ukrainian businesses, as well as businessmen and politicians from the two countries. These actions, however, can have far-reaching effects. The sanctions on Russia, for instance, have contributed to the weakening of the Russian economy and also resulted in losses to the European market. The World Trade Organization, being the recognized authority on international trade and finances, can render decisions on trade disputes among its member states. The International Criminal Court, meanwhile, exercises power in trying suspected international war criminals and rendering judgment on them.

Globalization presents both opportunities and challenges for states and government. Economic globalization provides developing states an opportunity to access markets they would otherwise be unable to enter given the protectionist policies embodied in high tariffs and quotas. Producers and sellers, in turn, gain access to a global market which enables them to diversify and improve thus contributing to economic growth. Political globalization enables countries to render assistance to each other in times of calamity. The emphasis on dialogue and cooperation among states also ensures that conflicts are easily resolved, thus peace and security throughout the world is ensured. Membership in regional and international organizations enables small countries to work together, gain more influence, and acquire a platform to call attention to issues that are significant to them. States are able to exchange ideas, learn from each other, and spread and sustain democratic values. Cultural globalization gives rise to a global community that accepts and celebrates diversity.

But despite the positive effects brought about by globalization, critics point out that globalization also poses challenges to the international community. Globalization is seen as a

detriment to the welfare of the state by some sectors, as global interests often run counter to national interests. Global initiatives and programs may be intended to benefit the majority of states, but globalization sometimes has negative impacts on individual states.

This is most evident in global economics, particularly in the development of free trade agreements and free trade areas. One of the key features of economic globalization is trade liberalization, which is the easing of restrictions on trading among countries. One major development that ushered in globalized trade was the General Agreement on Tariffs and Trade. The signatories to the agreement were required to reduce or even eliminate tariffs and quotas imposed on imported goods to allow the free and unrestricted flow of goods into countries, and also allow them access to foreign markets. Instead of bringing about an equal playing field in the global market, critics contend that only the industrialized and highly-developed nations enjoy the benefits of free trade. These countries often subsidize or spend a portion of their budget to support certain industries, resulting in cheaper production, affordable prices, and better quality. Developing countries, which do not enjoy these advantages, thus find it difficult to compete in the global market. Another criticism is that regional and international organizations are often used as a forum by more powerful nations to push their own economic agenda to the detriment of less powerful nations. Many global economic and financial institutions, such as the World Trade Organization, and the World Bank-International Monetary Fund, are considered tools by rich Western countries in pursuing their economic objectives.

Further complicating international relations is the fact that some states prefer to pursue national interests that run counter to global initiatives. Some states pursue actions that violate international agreements or conventions. The 1992 Kyoto Protocol imposed restriction on greenhouse gas emissions to reduce the effects of global warming and climate change. Despite this, a number of signatories to the treaty, including industrialized countries such as Japan, Russia, Canada, and the United States, have not fully complied with the established limits for gas emissions. Another example of unilateral action despite considerable international opposition is the 2003 invasion of Iraq by the United States. The U. S. alleged that Iraq was stockpiling and developing weapons of mass destruction (WMDs), including nuclear and biological weapons, and that the Iraqi government was a major supporter of international terrorism. Military action was therefore needed to curb the threat. Though the United States was able to win support from key allies such as the United Kingdom, military action against the Iraqi government was opposed by France, Germany, and Russia, who wanted the continuation of diplomatic efforts. Another example is the 2014 invasion of Ukraine by Russia, which was opposed and condemned by many European nations and the United States.

Given the advantages, disadvantages, and challenges brought about by globalization, states should carefully weigh the consequences of participating in global politics against their own state interests. Sovereign states, therefore, should protect the interests of its citizenry when venturing into international relations. Governments should determine the advantages and

minimize any disadvantages before entering into any agreement with other states. Economic and political relations should be established with the assumption that all participating states are on equal footing as sovereign states. Globalization is an inescapable reality, and states should exercise good judgment in order to reap more of its rewards and minimize its negative effects.

RECALL

- The state is the political structure of an organized community living under a government. The essential elements of the state include population, territory, government, and sovereignty.
- In international relations, the state is recognized as a sovereign state. This means that all states are equals. They are able to exercise their sovereignty and pursue their respective interests without undue influence from other states.
- Based on legitimacy, states are classified as either a *de jure* or a *de facto* state. A *de jure* state has legitimacy but is unable to exercise sovereignty, while a *de facto* state does not have legitimacy but is able to exercise sovereignty.
- Sovereign states may choose to limit their powers in certain situations. For example, states that comprise a federation surrender some of their powers to a federal government. In international relations, sovereign states limit some of their powers and interests when entering into agreements or alliances. States who are members of international organizations also comply with policies and regulations.
- The nation is a large group of people who share common characteristics such as language, traditions, and ethnicity. The people who belong to a nation share the same culture and history, and identify themselves as a people distinct from others.
- The emergence of nationhood is closely tied with the concepts of identity and ethnicity. It is through the process of nation formation and nation building that groups of people come together as a single, unified nation. Nation formation is the process where people gradually establish a national identity. Nation building, meanwhile, is a process initiated by the state that defines and reinforces national identity.
- Nationhood is an integral part of politics as citizens work together and are united by a common cause arising from their shared identity. It is a source of political integrity and is used as a means to call on citizens to support government actions. The state is seen as a representative of a particular nation and this gives rise to the concept of a nation state. The actions of the state are often determined by the values and traditions that are rooted in national identity.

- Globalization refers to the gradual process of political, economic, and cultural integration brought about by increased trade, exchange of ideas, and political relations among the states of the world. Political globalization arose out of the need for dialogue and cooperation among states to maintain world peace and security and address global issues and threats. Economic globalization was brought about by growing trade and financial relations among countries, and is evident in the emergence of free trade areas and economic blocs. Cultural globalization is brought about by improved technology that makes possible the rapid exchange of ideas and knowledge. This gives rise to a greater awareness and appreciation of cultures and the establishment of a diverse global community.
- Globalization, in its various dimensions, has given rise to many opportunities that brought about positive effects for many states. Global politics opens up opportunities for states to render aid to each other, provides avenues for dialogue and cooperation, and ensures that states learn from each other. Economic globalization enables emerging markets and industries to thrive due to trade liberalization, and provides states with opportunities for economic development. Cultural globalization has given rise to a global community that accepts and celebrates diversity.
- Despite its positive effects, globalization has also brought about a number of challenges. Critics of globalization consider it as a detriment to the welfare of some states, as global interests often run counter to national interests. Economic globalization has rendered some developing nations helpless in the face of competition in the global free market. The supranational character of political globalization, likewise, is seen as a limitation to national sovereignty. On the other hand, the refusal of powerful states to abide by international laws and standards also limits the effectiveness of global cooperation.

EXAMINE

A. Identify the following.

- _____ 1. It is an organized community that lives under a government.
- _____ 2. This refers to the ability of the state to govern and control its people and territory.
- _____ 3. This is the freedom from outside influences or foreign intervention.
- _____ 4. This is a legitimate state but cannot exercise sovereignty.

- _____ 5. This is a state that has no legitimacy but exercises sovereignty.
- _____ 6. This is a large group of people who share common characteristics such as language, traditions, ethnicity, culture, and history.
- _____ 7. This process is engaged in by states in order to develop, reinforce, and further develop a national identity.
- _____ 8. This is the gradual process of political, economic, and cultural integration brought about by increased trade and communication.
- _____ 9. This refers to a unified, coherent, and organized political entity that effectively exercises the powers of state.
- _____ 10. This is a dimension of globalization that is evident in international cooperation and dialogue.

B. Answer the following questions.

1. What factors bring about the emergence of a state?

2. How is a sovereign state able to exercise sovereignty and power?

3. What is the relationship between the nation and the state? How do they define each other?

4. What is nation-building? Identify examples of nation building.

5. How does globalization impact politics and governance in the international and national level?

ANALYZE

Form a group of five and discuss the positive and negative effects of globalization. Complete the table by providing the required information.

Dimensions of Globalization	Positive Effects	Negative Effects
Political		
Economic		
Cultural		

EMPOWER

- Identify a social, economic, or political issue in the Philippines and discuss how globalization can contribute to addressing it. Discuss ways that the Philippine government and the international community can cooperate in solving this problem.
- Research on the international reaction to the war on drugs implemented by the Duterte administration. Discuss the international views on the conduct of the war on drugs and compare them to the perspectives from the Philippine government. Relate the discussion to political globalization and sovereignty.
- Identify an international agreement or convention to which the Philippines is a signatory. Discuss the obligations of the Philippine government based on the agreement and convention. Evaluate how the government has complied with the agreement and describe the benefits gained from compliance.

Lesson 4

UNDERSTANDING POLITICAL IDEOLOGIES

ENGAGE

Is our government doing a good job? Do our public officials uphold the welfare of the people? Are the actions of our government and its officials good or bad? What is your idea of good governance? If you were to change one thing about politics and governance, what would it be? These are questions that are often asked by citizens whenever they ponder upon the actions and nature of their government. The ideas that come to mind when addressing these questions form the core of a political ideology that all members of the state have. As members of a state, we share certain views, beliefs, and values with our fellow citizens, and we expect our government to uphold these shared values and beliefs in its policies and programs. We also know that not all citizens share the same ideas and beliefs regarding the government, and these influence their actions whether they are supportive or critical of the government. Understanding political ideologies, therefore, is an important task for citizens as they seek to understand how government works and how they can better participate in the affairs of the state.

At the end of the lesson, students are expected to answer the following questions:

1. How do political ideologies make sense of state and society?
2. What are the various political ideologies and how are they similar or different from each other?
3. How does ideology influence politics and governance?
4. How does ideology influence citizenship?

DISCUSS

Political Ideology: Its Role and Functions

Ideology refers to a set of beliefs and ideas that shape an individual's or a group's views, actions, and interactions with the world. **Political ideology**, meanwhile, is a set of beliefs and ideas that define political activities, policies, and events.

A political ideology is comprised of related and supporting ideas that advance a certain idea of what society and government is or what it should be. It emphasizes certain values, principles, and ideals which distinguish it from other political ideologies. For example, liberalism emphasizes individual freedom while fascism gives primary importance to the state over the individual.

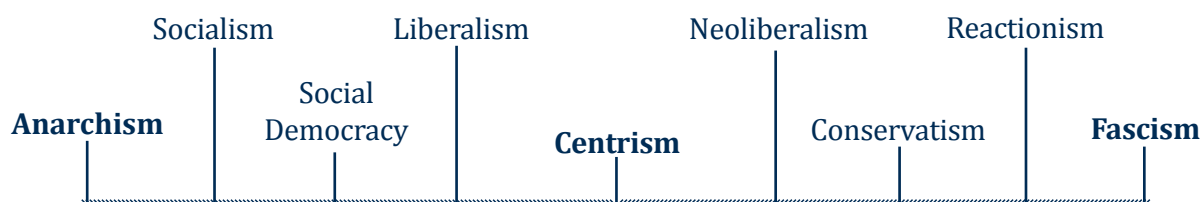
A political ideology outlines the role of government and the economy in society. It proposes ideas regarding the most effective government, and the social and economic structure that will enable the state to uphold its principles and realize its goals. Political ideologies also define how states should develop and transform. Ideology becomes the basis for the values, principles, and ideas to which the state subscribes to define its laws, programs, and political activities. A state may be defined by a single ideology, or it may choose to adopt several ideas from various ideologies. Within societies, different ideologies may exist and interact closely with each other. Political ideology is also the basis for the development of a **political culture**, which is a set of beliefs, attitudes, and behavior that define political processes and governance.

An ideology is considered to have four key functions: 1) it explains how society and politics are organized and how various aspects of politics work; 2) it evaluates whether a certain political action or program is good or bad; 3) it orients those who subscribe to it to have a sense of identity and direction; and 4) it provides a program or plan of action that will bring about political change.

The Political Spectrum

The **political spectrum** is a graphic representation of political ideologies along a line from left to right. The left side of the line includes those that adhere to liberal and socialist ideologies, while the right side of the line presents those that conform to conservative and fascist ideologies. The center of the line represents a moderate or “centrist” ideology which balances the ideas from the left and right sides of the political spectrum.

The following is a presentation of the major political ideologies arranged along the political spectrum.



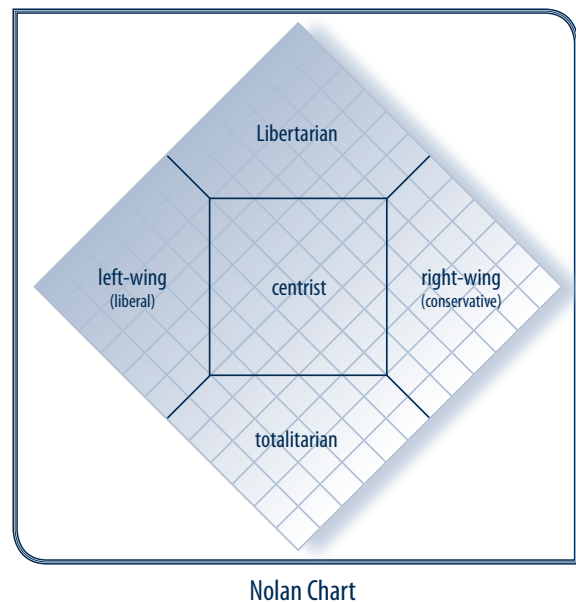
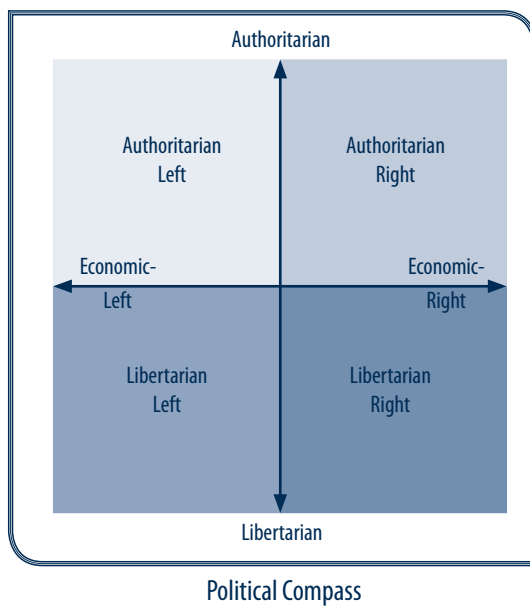
The concept of the political spectrum is where we get the popular terms “left wing/left-leaning”, “right wing/right-leaning”, and “centrist” when discussing political views. This is

traced to the French Revolution and the *Estates General*, the legislative body of the French government. Representatives opposed to the monarchy sat on the left side of the assembly hall, while the supporters of the king sat on the right side of the hall. “Leftist” ideas, in the modern context, include ideologies that value individual freedom over government control. These include liberalism, social democracy, socialism, and anarchism. “Rightist” or “right wing” ideologies emphasize government power and authority, often at the expense of individual freedom. These include neoliberalism, conservatism, reactionism, and fascism. As one goes from the center to the other end of the spectrum, the ideologies become more extreme. It can thus be said that on the “leftist” side, liberalism is the most moderate ideology while anarchism is the most extreme; while on the “right wing” side, neoliberalism is the most moderate while fascism is the most extreme. “Centrist” ideas, meanwhile, combine elements from both the left and right and advocate more moderate policies.

LEFT (Liberal-Socialist)	CENTER (Moderate)	RIGHT (Conservative-Fascist)
<ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Emphasis on personal liberty and human rights 2. Government regulation of the market 3. Government control over essential services and economic activities 4. Envisions an egalitarian society where there is no distinction between people based on economic status or identity (socialist) 5. Seeks a limited role for the government, especially with regard to private matters and individual decisions (libertarian) 6. Often advocates political and social change through revolutionary means 7. Most extreme views advocate the dismantling of the government to be replaced by community-based governance (anarchist) 	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Combines ideas and principles from both the left and the right 2. Emphasizes balance between extreme views and ideas 3. Seeks the “middle ground” in political issues 4. Seeks to maintain the status quo in politics and society 5. May lean toward some leftist ideas or policies (center-left), or may prefer some right-wing ideas or policies (center-right) 	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Emphasis on the welfare of the state or the “common good” 2. Individual interests should give way to national or state interests 3. Markets should be free and unregulated 4. Emphasizes the rule of law and the power of the state, especially in times of crisis (authoritarian) 5. Often nationalistic and ethnic-centered 6. Prefers a strong military and seeks to project a powerful image in international affairs 7. Most extreme views demand total control over all aspects of the lives of their citizens (totalitarian)

Note that similar ideologies (i.e., those that belong to the “same side” in the political spectrum) do not necessarily agree on some views regarding politics, economy, and society, and that ideologies often give rise to other branches that may espouse some extreme or radically unique views on politics and society.

While the political spectrum is a useful tool in evaluating and determining the scope of ideas that are prevalent within a state, other tools have emerged that can help us get a better picture of political ideologies that influence a state and even those of individuals. The **Nolan Chart** and the **Political Compass** are diagrams that plot political ideologies along two axes based on the political spectrum (left-right) and social freedom (authoritarian-libertarian). These diagrams take into consideration the possibility that political ideas from one side of the spectrum may overlap or relate with those from the opposite side, and that citizens and groups may espouse ideas that are influenced, in various degrees, by both sides of the political spectrum.



Major Political Ideologies and Related Ideas

The following are the major political ideologies most prevalent in states throughout the world.

Liberalism

This ideology considers economic and social inequality as undesirable and seeks to establish a society that provides opportunities for growth to all individuals. Public policy, therefore, must be oriented toward eliminating discrimination and barriers to growth and development. All citizens must have access to essential services such as health care, education,

and social security. Liberalism upholds the recognition of human rights and freedoms such as freedom of speech and freedom of religion, gender equality, and a secular government.

Social Democracy

This ideology seeks to implement socialist reforms in society within the framework of a democratic government and capitalist economy. Social democrats advocate government regulation of the economy, income distribution, and the promotion of social welfare. Social democracy envisions the establishment of a socialist state through legal, non-violent means.

Socialism

Socialism envisions the establishment of a state characterized by public ownership of resources and the means of production. Production is done not for profit, but to meet basic human needs. There is democratic control over the use of resources and the production of goods and services are done in a cooperative manner. The government ensures that all citizens have free access to goods and services. **Communism** is a socialist ideology that believes that inequality is a result of capitalism and the existence of a class system. Society, therefore, must be transformed to eliminate class divisions in order to achieve equality. **Marxism** is a communist ideology that believes capitalist societies are characterized by class conflict or the struggle between the working class and the capitalists. Marxists believe that the working class or the proletariat will lead a revolution that will establish a communist society. Communism is more revolutionary in its orientation as it advocates mass action and even armed struggle in order to achieve its goals.

Anarchism

This is the most extreme of the ideologies on the left as it advocates the total dismantling and elimination of the state. For anarchists, the state is undesirable as its various aspects such as control, political authority, and hierarchy represent everything that is detrimental to freedom and individualism. Instead of the state, anarchists advocate the establishment of self-governed communities where individuals manage their affairs through cooperative effort and mutual respect.

Neoliberalism

This ideology is based on *laissez-faire* economics which upholds free markets and trade liberalization. Neoliberals believe that economic growth is key to human progress, and that the government must not intervene in the activities of markets and capitalists. This ideology gained popularity during the 1980s and was implemented by the governments of the United Kingdom and the United States. In particular, the Reagan administration of the United States advocated “trickle down” economics – a policy that reduced taxes on the wealthy and businesses.

It was believed that the policy would result in economic benefits for the rest of the population of the United States.

Conservatism

This ideology upholds a strong, stable government and the firm implementation of laws. Conservatives value continuity of tradition and are more nationalistic, religious, and moralistic in their political views. This view also upholds the existence of a free market with limited intervention from the government. Conservatives also prefer a strong military and advocate a strong presence in international affairs. In the United States, conservative thought adheres to the belief in a “limited government” in the sense that government should not interfere in the individual beliefs and decisions of its citizens. It is the view of conservatives that social problems are not the concern of the government and should be addressed at the local or community level. Conservatism is also wary of any change or reform, and are generally opposed to socialist ideas.

Reactionism

This ideology is a variation of conservatism. While conservatism seeks to maintain the status quo, reactionism advocates a return to the “old ways”. Reactionaries consider the present state of society as flawed and looks to the past which they consider as a more orderly and better time. Society, therefore, should change in a way that traditional practices and previous state policies are revived.

Fascism

This is a radical right-wing ideology that is based on fierce nationalism and authoritarianism. Fascism advocates a very strong central government, with many of the aspects of democratic government subject to restrictions or even eliminated. Fascism emerged as a significant political ideology in Italy during the 1930s, although this ideology also influenced the rise of the Nazi Party in Germany and militarism in Japan. For fascists, society is in danger from various threats such as invasion, war, or rebellion, and a very strong government with unlimited powers is needed to address these threats. The fascist government is centered on a dictatorship, and political opposition and dissent is suppressed. For fascists, the interests of the state is considered paramount, and individual liberties and interests must give way to the interests of the state.

Ideology and Governance

Ideology is a major influence on the way government organizes itself and conducts its activities. The ideas and principles espoused by political ideologies become the bases of state policies and principles, which in turn defines laws and political traditions. Citizens are also

influenced by state ideologies as they are influenced and even indoctrinated to conform to a political culture defined by the accepted ideologies of the state.

In actual practice, most advocates of political ideologies do not fully embrace all ideas of their preferred ideologies. Many political groups have a core ideology as basis for their fundamental beliefs, but may adopt some ideas from other political ideologies. Many governments seek a balance between left-leaning and right-leaning policies, while some states declare themselves to be fully committed to a certain ideology. States that advocate communist or socialist ideologies include China, Laos, Cuba, and Vietnam. Fascist regimes emerged in Spain during the 1930s during the reign of Francisco Franco, while the Peron administration of Argentina was also primarily influenced by Fascist ideals. Many states have active political parties that advocate ideologies across the political spectrum. Governments may also experience changes in their political ideologies due to historical developments or social change.

Political systems may be established based on a single ideology or a combination of ideas from various ideologies. Authoritarianism and totalitarianism, for instance, are influenced by right-wing ideologies. Authoritarianism is a political system with a strong central government, limited freedom for citizens, and constraints on political institutions. Totalitarianism, meanwhile, is a political system where government authority is unlimited and the state has control over the public and private lives of its citizens. Libertarianism, on the other hand, a political system where the government has limited influence over the economy and society, appeals to some liberal and conservative groups.

In Philippine politics, one important evidence of the influence of political ideologies in governance is the Philippine Constitution. The 1987 Constitution has various sections that embody certain liberal, socialist, conservative, and even fascist ideas. For instance, Section 18 of Article VII, which defines the president's power to suspend the writ of *habeas corpus* for a limited period of time and declare martial law in times of emergency, is an essentially fascist power. This power, however, is tempered by the fact that it is subject to the review and approval of the other branches of government. Article III (Bill of Rights) and Article XIII (Social Justice and Human Rights) are expressions of liberal and socialist ideals, as the rights included uphold individual liberties, the interests of specific sectors of society, and serve as a check on the power of the state. Article XV (The Family) is influenced by conservative ideas as it upholds the value of the Filipino family.

Filipino party politics, however, is not fully influenced by political ideology in the sense that adherence to a certain political ideology does not define the identity and purpose of political parties in our country. Unlike in countries such as the United Kingdom and the United States, where major political parties have definite political ideologies that define their programs and policies, Philippine political parties are seen more as political machines for individual candidates to gain political office rather than platforms for advocating political ideas. In fact, the programs and platforms of major political parties at present are very similar to one another. Political commentators have noted that Philippine politics is primarily personality driven, and

citizens often base their participation in government on whether or not they identify with or “like” a certain political leader or official. The prevalence of **patronage politics**, where politicians use state resources to reward supporters, is also another factor that prevents the emergence of an ideology-based party politics in the country.

However, one political ideology that has gained popularity among Filipino politicians in recent times is **populism**, which emphasizes the interests of the masses. This view often presents the masses as being oppressed by the elite or an oligarchy, and that it is the role of the government to limit the privileges of the elite and uplift the condition of the masses. Populism does not fall neatly along the political spectrum as its ideas are often used by various ideological groups to advance their respective causes and gain popularity among the people.

On the other hand, there are several non-government interest groups and organizations in our country that are influenced by political ideologies. Organizations such as AKBAYAN and Kilusang Mayo Uno profess an agenda that is primarily influenced by socialist ideas. The Communist Party of the Philippines is an organization that advocates the establishment of communism in the country through an armed struggle. Religious organizations, meanwhile, primarily adhere to conservative beliefs and ideas. These and other organizations continually interact with the government in an effort to uphold their respective agendas.

Ideology and Citizenship

All individuals have their respective ideologies that enable them to make sense of the world and their place in it. Political ideologies, in particular, are a product of state indoctrination and an individual’s own background, experiences, and acquired knowledge. Political views and beliefs, in turn, determine the actions and behavior of citizens. Political ideologies, therefore, are a basis of citizen action and participation in governance. The influence of political ideology on citizen action is evident in four key areas: 1) respect for law and order; 2) political participation; 3) humanitarianism; and 4) political dissent, protest, and civil disobedience.

Reflect on your own political ideology by answering the following questions:

1. Do you believe that the laws of the state uphold the welfare of the people?
2. Which do you consider more important: upholding personal freedom or upholding law and order?
3. Is it reasonable for the government to suspend certain rights and freedoms during times of crisis (wars, rebellion, invasion)?
4. Do you keep yourself informed about government activities, programs, and initiatives?

5. Do you support government activities in your community and school?
6. Do you believe that ordinary citizens are able to bring about genuine and effective change in our government and society?
7. Have you ever participated in political events such as meetings or rallies?
8. Have you ever participated in activities organized by your local government in the barangay or city?
9. Would society benefit more from a government that controls every aspect of our lives, or from a government that allows its citizens to make choices for themselves?
10. Do you agree that all individuals, whatever their background or situation in life, deserve to be recognized as persons with dignity, rights, and freedom?
11. Do you believe that it is the government's role to address social problems such as poverty and inequality?
12. Have you ever been involved with humanitarian or charitable causes? In what capacity were you able to help?
13. Do you believe that public officials and leaders should be held accountable for their actions?
14. Do you believe that officials who do not uphold the ideals and principles of the state should be removed from office?
15. Do you agree that citizens should criticize the actions and decisions of public officials?
16. Do you believe that mass actions such as rallies and protests are effective ways of expressing opinion for or against a government policy or action?
17. What will you do if government policies and actions clash with your personal beliefs and convictions?

An awareness of one's political ideology is essential as it helps citizens participate effectively in politics. Ideology can be a source of stability and unity, especially if majority of the citizens believe in the principles and values of the government. Citizens who do not share in the prevailing doctrines and ideas of the state, on the other hand, can be an effective counter-balance to the state and provide a voice of dissent and opposition whenever necessary. Being aware of one's political beliefs and values also helps in critically examining government actions and programs. Citizen support for the government should not be unconditional and uncritical, thus an awareness of what one stands for and how government should uphold the shared beliefs of its citizens is necessary to prevent any action of the government that might go against the principles and values of a democratic state.

RECALL

- Political ideology is a set of beliefs and ideas that define political activities, policies, and events. It is comprised of related and supporting ideas that advance a certain view of what society and government is or what it should be.
- Political ideologies propose ideas regarding the role of the government and economy in society, and how these contribute to the development and transformation of the state. Ideologies are the bases of political action and the development of a state's political culture. Ideologies have explanatory, evaluative, orienting, and programmatic functions.
- The political spectrum is a representation of political ideologies arranged along a line. Those ideologies on the left side of the spectrum adhere to liberal and socialist ideas, while those on the right side conform to conservative and fascist ideals.
- Major liberal political ideologies include liberalism, social democracy, socialism, and anarchism. These ideas uphold equality, government regulation of economic activities and resources, and recognition of individual rights and freedoms.
- Major conservative political ideologies include neoliberalism, conservatism, reactionism, and fascism. These ideas uphold a strong government, strict adherence to laws and traditional values, and the welfare of the state above the individual.
- Ideology is an important influence on governance as it defines political activities, citizenship, and the development of laws and policies. Ideological influences are most evident in Philippine laws, particularly the Philippine Constitution. On the other hand, the influence of ideology is less evident in Philippine party politics. There are many interest groups in our society, however, that are influenced by political ideologies. These groups continually interact with the government in pursuit of their respective objectives.
- Ideology is also important for citizenship as political beliefs and values influence participation in government activities and programs. Citizens who share in the ideologies of the government are often enthusiastic supporters of government action, while those who hold opposing ideas become a source of opposition and dissent that counter-balance government power.

EXAMINE

A. Identify the following.

- _____ 1. This is a set of beliefs and ideas that shape an individual or group's views, actions, and interactions with the world.
- _____ 2. This is a set of beliefs and ideas that define activities, policies, and events.
- _____ 3. A set of beliefs, attitudes, and behavior that define political process and governance.
- _____ 4. A graphic representation that present political ideologies along a line from left to right.
- _____ 5. This term refers to ideologies that value individual freedom and rejects government control.
- _____ 6. This term refers to ideologies that emphasize government power and authority at the expense of individual freedom.
- _____ 7. This ideology seeks to establish a society that provides all citizens opportunities for growth.
- _____ 8. This ideology envisions a state that owns all resources and means of production.
- _____ 9. This ideology upholds a strong, stable government, the firm implementation of laws, and the continuity of tradition.
- _____ 10. This ideology advocates the interests of the masses, and seeks to limit the privileges of the elite.

B. Identify which political ideology the following statements refer to. Write your answer in the space provided.

- _____ 1. Government is unnecessary and evil.
- _____ 2. If we uphold a free market, not only will it benefit businessmen but also the rest of the country.
- _____ 3. During the time of martial law in the 1970s there was peace and order in the country. Therefore, we need to impose martial law once again to bring back peace and order.
- _____ 4. We must make sure that the government is able to provide affordable housing for all citizens as a way to uplift their way living.
- _____ 5. Private property must be abolished, and the government should take control of all economic resources and activities.

- _____ 6. Communities are the best political institutions since they manage their affairs through the cooperative efforts of its members.
- _____ 7. A socialist state can be established if we work within the government and make gradual changes to it.
- _____ 8. We must give the President all the power he needs to eradicate the drug menace in our country. Human rights are irrelevant as long as the drug problem exists in our country.
- _____ 9. The workers and peasants have been oppressed for too long. It is time for them to rise up and overthrow this capitalist government.
- _____ 10. We must make sure that the government is empowered to address crime and fully implement the laws throughout the country.

C. Answer the following questions.

1. What are the important functions of a political ideology?

2. What are the general features of ideologies on the left and right side of the political spectrum?

3. How do political ideologies influence the conduct of governance? Discuss an example in Philippine politics.

4. Which ideas from the various ideologies do you believe are applicable in Philippine politics? Explain.

5. How can an understanding of political ideologies benefit you as a citizen?

ANALYZE

A. Compare the various political ideologies using the table below. Fill in the spaces by writing their respective views and ideas on society, the economy, government, and citizens in the appropriate spaces.

Political Ideology	Society and Economy	Government	Citizens
Liberalism			
Social Democracy			
Socialism			
Anarchism			
Neoliberalism			
Conservatism			
Reactionism			
Fascism			

B. Examine the 1987 Philippine Constitution and determine how the various political ideologies are reflected in its provisions. Fill out the table below with the required information.

Political Ideology	Section or Provision	Relevant content and ideas
Liberalism		
Social Democracy		
Socialism		
Anarchism		
Neoliberalism		
Conservatism		
Reactionism		
Fascism		

- A. Should democracy be considered an ideology? Conduct a class discussion regarding this question.**
- B. Choose a local or national politician. Look into his or her background, government record, and political ideas and convictions. Determine which political ideologies relate most closely to his or her ideas.**
- C. Come up with a proposed political party with an ideological platform. Define the objectives of your party as well as the guiding principles and ideologies that will be the basis of your program of action. Present an outline of your party's platform in class.**
- D. Determine your personal ideology regarding politics and governance. Take an online test to determine your political ideology based on the political compass (<https://www.politicalcompass.org/test/>). Present and discuss your personal results in class. Evaluate whether the results of the test correspond to your own personal views on politics and governance.**

The Development of

PHILIPPINE DEMOCRACY

LESSON

- 5 Early Political Systems From Precolonial Times Until The Philippine Revolution
- 6 Philippine Politics in the 20th Century
- 7 An Introduction to the 1987 Constitution

Lesson 5

EARLY POLITICAL SYSTEMS FROM PRECOLONIAL TIMES UNTIL THE PHILIPPINE REVOLUTION

ENGAGE

Present-day Philippine politics is a product of a long history influenced by colonialism and nationalism. The emergence of government among precolonial Filipino societies was considered a mark of civilization and a gradual transition to nationhood. Governance was embodied by the precolonial barangay and the Muslim sultanates in Mindanao. The political growth of native Filipinos, however, was cut short by the arrival of Westerners who conquered the islands and imposed a colonial government. For centuries, Filipinos lived under a society and government defined by colonial goals and policies. The growth of nationalism during the 19th century gave rise to the Propaganda Movement and the Philippine Revolution. Independence was declared in 1898 but the Filipino aspiration for freedom was cut short by the arrival of the Americans and the establishment of a new colonial government under the United States. Throughout the colonial period, Filipinos have developed and articulated a concept of nationhood that fueled their desire to fight for freedom and establish an independent government that would embody the shared ideals and aspirations of the Filipino nation.

At the end of the lesson, students are expected to answer the following questions:

1. What led to the formation of the earliest societies and governments in the Philippines during precolonial times?
2. What factors influenced the growth and development of the barangay and the sultanate during the precolonial period?
3. How did Spanish colonialism transform Philippine society, government, and governance?
4. How were the native Filipinos affected by Spanish colonialism?
5. What changes led to the emergence of Filipino nationalism during colonial times?
6. How was Filipino nationalism embodied by the Propaganda Movement and Philippine Revolution?
7. How did American imperialism affect the Filipino struggle for independence?
8. What are some notable achievements of Filipino revolutionaries and propagandists that contributed to the growth of Filipino nationhood?

Discuss

Early Pre-Colonial Political Structures

The precolonial Filipino communities share some cultural similarities with ancient communities in Southeast Asia and even Polynesia. The first communities that were established were defined by inter-island trade and seafaring, and these activities contributed to the growth and expansion of the first barangays. Ancient communities were situated on riverbanks and close to the sea. The people depended on maritime travel and their livelihood was primarily based on access to bodies of water such as seas and rivers. Land-based communities, meanwhile, were nomadic and lived by hunting animals and gathering plants. With the advent of agriculture and improvements in technology, small bands of people began to come together and form large communities called the barangay.

Barangay Systems

The **barangay** was the basic political unit that existed throughout the Philippine islands prior to the 1400s. Each barangay was an independent polity (political entity) which exercised authority over several communities within a defined territory. Barangays also interacted with other communities, and there is evidence of the establishment of political-military alliances between barangays for mutual protection and support.

The barangay was led by a **datu**, who rose to the position either by birth or by valor and feats achieved in war. In Luzon, the word *datu* referred to the chieftain. However, in the Visayas, the term *datu* referred not only to the chieftain as an individual, but to an entire social class that included the relatives and friends of the chieftain. In Luzon, the noble class was called *maharlika*. The *datu*, in most cases, belonged to the nobility and was afforded great respect by the community. In addition, women also had the opportunity to become *datu* as precolonial society recognized women rulers and warriors and held them in high regard. Meanwhile, other terms were also used to refer to rulers during precolonial times such as *lakan* and *raja*. The *datu* implemented the customary laws of the community and served as the commander-in-chief during times of war. The *datu* was also responsible for the livelihood of the people and the barangay's collective wealth.

The barangays were defined by fierce independence and distinct communal and cultural identities. This led to the emergence of loosely-connected communities throughout Luzon and Visayas, which regularly interacted through trade and warfare. The emergence of alliances and kingdoms, such as the Kingdom of Manila and Tondo in Luzon, was considered an early indication of the gradual integration of the precolonial communities. This process, however, was cut short by the arrival of Spanish conquerors in the 16th century.

The Sultanates

While Luzon and Visayas were largely a patchwork of independent polities, a different situation was unfolding in Mindanao. From the 1400s onwards, the various communities in Sulu and Maguindanao were organizing themselves into sultanates. The Sultanates of Sulu and Maguindanao represented a significant political advancement in precolonial Philippines, as the Muslim communities of Mindanao achieved a level of political unity and stability that enabled them to establish strong diplomatic relations with other Asian communities and successfully resist the Spanish conquest.

In terms of structure, the Mindanao sultanates had a degree of centralization. The sultan was the foremost leader of the sultanate. Under him, several *datus* administered the barangays in his domain. The *datus*, in turn, were part of a council called the Ruma Bichara, which assisted or provided counsel to the sultan. This council also included aristocrats known as the *panglima*. The Ruma Bichara oversaw the other officials of the state, which included the *wajir* (advisers); the *raja laut* (the leader of the maritime forces); and the *qadi* (magistrate).

Political legitimacy in these sultanates was based on blood and religious ties. The members of the sultanate considered themselves part of a vast political community bound by faith, thus governance in the sultanate was defined by religious tradition and Shariah law. The sultans also traced their lineage not only from the native rulers of the ancient barangays in Mindanao, but also from the bloodline of the earliest Arab missionaries who came to spread Islam throughout the islands.

One of the first sultanates in the Philippines was established in Sulu by Sayyid Abu Bakr, a Muslim missionary and the very first sultan of Sulu. Coming from the Arab region and being the first to have propagated Islam in the archipelago, Abu Bakr implemented rules which were rooted in the Quran, including the first code of law in Sulu. In 1450 CE, Jolo became the capital of the Sultanate of Sulu. The sultanate soon expanded and its barangays became unified as the Bangsa Sug (Sulu Nation). It eventually controlled the whole Sulu archipelago, the surrounding areas in Mindanao, and even parts of Borneo and Palawan. The sultanate eventually gained wealth, influence, and recognition from other states and communities. At one point in their history, a delegation of Sulu royalty stayed in the Ming court in China and established an embassy there.

Another sultanate was established in the second decade of the 1500s in Maguindanao. Sharif Muhammed Kabungsuwan, a high-ranking noble from the Sultanate of Malacca, escaped the Portuguese conquest of Malacca in 1511 and arrived at a community close to the Rio Grande de Mindanao or Pulangui River. He established the Sultanate of Maguindanao in the area of modern Cotabato City. Through military alliances, intermarriages, and religious conversions, Kabungsuwan succeeded in uniting the neighboring barangays and established the influential Sultanate of Maguindanao.

It is believed that a third sultanate was emerging in the Kingdom of Maynilad in the island of Luzon during the 16th century. There were historical indications that a “proto-sultanate”

emerged from an alliance with powerful barangays such as Tondo. Other factors that brought about the establishment of the sultanate of Manila were diplomatic relations and intermarriages with the Sultanate of Brunei, and the gradual conversion of the local communities to Islam. However, in 1574, the development of the Maynilad sultanate was interrupted by the arrival of the Spaniards and the successful military conquest of Maynilad and the rest of Luzon.

Spanish Colonialism in the Philippines

The Renaissance, a period of cultural and intellectual rebirth in Europe during the 14th century, introduced the desire for exploration, acquisition of knowledge, and discovery among Europeans. This gave way to the Age of Discovery which resulted in greater contact and trading relations between Europe and Asia. One offshoot of the Age of Discovery was **colonialism**, an economic and political ideology that influenced the European kingdoms to embark on voyages of exploration and conquest. Colonialism believes that the power and influence of a country is based on the number of territories it conquers and colonies it establishes. Spain was one of the European states which embarked on discovering and conquering colonies, and it was specifically motivated by the spice trade in Asia. In 1521, Spain embarked on its colonial pursuits in Asia as it launched the Magellan expedition. Magellan and his crew arrived in the Philippine islands and traveled throughout Eastern and Central Visayas. Magellan's intervention in a local conflict among feuding datus led to an ill-fated military attack on Mactan island which led to his death. However, the Spanish government was steadfast in its desire to establish a colonial outpost in Asia. The Magellan expedition was soon followed by several more attempts by the Spaniards to conquer the islands.

The Spanish Colonial Government in the Philippines

In 1565, Miguel Lopez de Legazpi successfully conquered the native communities in Luzon and Visayas and declared the Philippines a colony of Spain. Legazpi's success was not only due to effective use of arms, but was also made possible through a series of alliances with friendly datus and barangays. His second-in-command, Martin de Goiti, and his nephew, Juan de Salcedo, also led a series of military conquests of communities and tribes throughout Luzon. This phase of early colonization was then followed by a period of *reduccion*, or the relocation of local inhabitants into towns or *pueblos*. Large barangays were converted into *pueblos*, while smaller barangays were brought together to form a single town. The *pueblo* was modeled after the European town, and the arrangement of buildings and landmarks emphasized the colonial rule of the Spaniards. At the center of the *pueblo* was the plaza, and situated around it were the municipal hall, and the houses of the *principales*. Thus, Spanish colonialism began the process of integration of the Filipino people by bringing together the separate and independent barangays into cohesive communities under Spanish rule.

In the first few decades of Spanish colonial administration, the Spaniards adopted a European-style feudal system of governance in the islands. The conquered territories were divided into districts called *encomiendas* and were distributed among Spaniards who acted as feudal lords, or *encomenderos*. The encomendero was tasked to establish political authority, administer and improve the local economy (which involved agriculture and trade), and promote education. The encomenderos also received the tribute which the local *cabezas de barangay* collected. The encomienda system was eventually put to an end as the local towns were organized into provinces or *alcaldias*.

The Philippine islands, as a colony of the Kingdom of Spain, was placed under the sovereign authority of the monarch of Spain. The direct administration of the colony, however, was done by the Viceroy of *Nueva España* (New Spain or Mexico), who was the representative of the Spanish monarch. The Philippines was one of many Spanish colonies throughout the world, and was placed under the jurisdiction of the *Consejo de Indias* (Council of the Indies), which was later renamed the *Ministerio de Ultramar* (Overseas Ministry). The colonial government of the Philippines was headed by the governor-general, who was the highest Spanish public official in the Philippines.

The provincial government was organized under the *alcaldia*, for peaceful districts, while areas that have yet to be fully pacified were organized as *corregimientos*. The *alcaldias* were administered by a provincial governor, the *alcalde mayor*, while the *corregimientos* were headed by a *corregidor* or military governor. The *alcalde mayor* directed the executive, judicial, and legislative aspects of governance in the province. He was also in charge of collecting taxes and disciplining ineffective public officials. The *alcalde mayor* also has authority over the *gobernadorcillos* who ruled the towns in his province.

The local leaders in the *pueblos* and *barangays*, meanwhile, were elected by members of the *principalia*. The *principales* were convened and they chose among themselves the *cabezas de barangay*. The *cabezas*, in turn, elected among themselves the *gobernadorcillo* or town leader. This system of appointment ensured that leadership was concentrated in the hands of the local elite. This also meant that given the small number of Spanish officials and friars in the Philippines, the colonial government ruled the islands through the native elite. A large majority of Spanish officials were located in Manila, which was the colonial capital and recognized as a special administrative city or *ayuntamiento*.

The colonial government adopted some aspects of precolonial governance in an attempt to establish more effective control over the natives. Many of the old ruling elites were incorporated into the new colonial state as local administrators. The old *datus* became village heads or *cabezas de barangay*. The *cabeza de barangay* was tasked with the collection of tributes from the people. The *cabeza* was also the *capitan de barangay* and was placed in charge of local defense and security. Each *cabeza* was exempted from tribute payment and forced labor (*polo y servicio*), and was treated with great respect by the locals. Furthermore, *cabezas* were oftentimes given an opportunity to become town mayor or *gobernadorcillo*.

Thus, the precolonial elites who ruled the ancient barangays became the colonial elites who administered their pueblos or communities under the Spanish rule. Together with the Spanish rulers, the ruling elite was referred to as *principales* or the *principalia* class.

The Governor-General and Colonial Governance in the Philippines

The **governor-general** was the highest and most powerful official of the Spanish colonial government in the Philippines. Apart from his administrative role, the governor-general also had a military role and was considered the commander-in-chief of the military forces. It is for this reason that the full title of the governor-general was “Governor and Captain-General of the Philippines.”

The governor-general was appointed by the King of Spain and acted as his representative in the country. The leadership of the governor-general encompassed the executive and judicial branches. He had the power to assign officials to various government positions. He was also in charge of the *Royal Audiencia*, the judiciary body in the Philippines at that time.

The colonial government lacked a formal legislative body to create and promulgate laws for the islands. Instead, many of the laws in the country were made by the King of Spain and the governor-general was tasked to implement them in the colony. One significant basis of laws and governance for the colony was the *Recopilacion de las leyes de los reynos de las Indias*, a compilation of laws applicable to the various Spanish colonies throughout the world. The governor-general, however, had the power of *cumplase*, where he could suspend or ignore laws imposed by the Crown if he considered them inapplicable to the Philippines.

The leadership of the governor-general was subject to a number of limitations. For instance, he only served a short term which was determined by the Viceroy in Mexico or by the central government in Madrid. Furthermore, his administrative conduct was also constantly checked. This was done through the *visita*, an unannounced inspection from the Spanish government, and by the *residencia*, which was review of his actions in government at the end of his term as governor-general. The reputation, wealth, and pension of the governor-general depended on the findings of this post-term investigative body. He could be stripped of aristocratic titles, fined, deprived of pension, or even imprisoned if found to have committed crimes and misdemeanors, or if he was determined to have failed in his administrative duties.

Despite the implementation of monitoring and review on the governor-general and other colonial officials, this did not stop cases of abuse and corruption among their ranks. One factor that limited the effective governance of the colony was the vast distance between Spain, New Spain, and the Philippines. The challenges to transportation and communication meant that monitoring of the activities of the colonial government was difficult, and many of the laws and pronouncements made by the Crown often took several months to reach the Philippines. Likewise, it took a long time for news about the colony to reach Spain. This meant that the

Spanish monarch and his council could not immediately address issues of governance in the colony. The colony also gained a reputation for being a backwater region of the kingdom and was an unpopular destination for colonial officials. Thus, many of the Spaniards assigned to the Philippines – officials, soldiers, and even priests – were considered unfit for public service since they did not possess the skills or attitudes of effective public officials. These factors eventually gave rise to a culture that encouraged corruption and abuse of power in government.

One example of the rampant abuse experienced in the Philippines was the unfair labor condition experienced by the natives in the mandatory *polo y servicio* or labor service in the construction of roads, bridges, buildings, and other projects. The law required that the natives must work within their localities only. However, there were many instances when Spanish officials assigned natives to faraway areas to work for various tasks such as public works, logging, and galleon construction. There were also reports in Central Luzon of Spaniards who took food and produce from the locals without paying for them. These and many other abuses committed against Filipinos resulted in several revolts that broke out throughout the 17th and 18th centuries.

Developments during the 18th and 19th Centuries

In the early 1700s, the Habsburg dynasty that ruled Spain for centuries ended. This was initially due to the death of the Habsburg king in 1700. Also, the Habsburgs were defeated by the Bourbons during the War of Spanish Succession (1700-1714) which led to the establishment of a Bourbon dynasty in Spain. The change in leadership in the monarchy brought about gradual changes in the colonial government. The most notable change in policy of the Bourbons was a ban on the appointment of priests and bishops to government posts. More changes occurred at the beginning of the 19th century. The Philippines was opened to foreign trade, and British and Americans traders became active in the islands. More Spaniards began to migrate into the country, and the construction of the Suez Canal greatly improved transportation and communication between Spain and the Philippines.

The early 1800s also saw the conquest of Spain by Napoleon Bonaparte's forces. The conquest of Spain by Napoleon marked the spread of liberal ideas throughout Europe. The disruption in Spanish politics gave many colonies the opportunity to govern themselves in the absence of a legitimate monarch. These factors eventually inspired the Spanish colonies in Latin America to wage revolutions and fight for independence from Spain. Throughout the 1820s, several Latin American colonies successfully won their independence from Spain. Mexico and the colonies in Central America declared their independence from Spain in 1821. Thus, the Philippines was placed under the direct rule of Spain. The Spaniards sought to prevent more revolutions from happening in its remaining colonies and thus implemented tighter controls. The *guardia civil* was established as a constabulary force to prevent possible revolts by Filipinos.

Early Revolts and the Reform Movement

The Spanish colonial administration of the Philippines faced numerous uprisings since the early years of colonial rule. One of the earliest attempts at an uprising was the 1587 Tondo Conspiracy where various members of the local elite, including former *datus* and their relatives, sought to drive out the Spaniards. Notable uprisings such as the Dagohoy Revolt (1744-1829) in Bohol and the Silang Revolt (1762-1763) in Ilocos, gained widespread support and participation from the people. These revolts were mainly reactions to the abuses that the natives suffered under the Spaniards. However, there were also political motivations behind these revolts. For instance, the Silang Revolt and the 1660 Malong Revolt in Pangasinan declared independence from Spanish colonial rule. However, the objectives of the uprisings merely focused on local concerns. The independent states they envisioned and declared only covered their respective communities. There was no evidence of a desire for nationhood as the varied communities in the colony were still divided along ethnolinguistic lines, and community leaders were intensely local and parochial in their views and aspirations. The lack of integration among the various communities in the Philippines, brought about by differences in language and cultural traditions, was a significant factor that contributed to the failure of the initial revolts against the colonial government.

During the 19th century, increased trade opportunities and improvements in technology, particularly in agriculture, brought about the emergence of a middle class, which consisted of families that gained wealth through trade and commerce. This meant that apart from the *principales* or the political elite, a new group of influential natives emerged due to their accumulated wealth. This transformation brought about the emergence of a new group of liberal-minded citizens, the *ilustrados*, who adopted liberal ideas and views because of their travels and studies in Europe. This group began to call for political reforms in the Philippines. It was during this time that various members of the upper class began to establish a strong bond due to their shared ideals and the fact that they were all born in the Philippines. Also included in this group were the *insulares*, who were full-blooded Spaniards born in the Philippines.

The Kingdom of Spain saw liberalism as a threat to its authority and attempted to counter the spread of liberal ideas in the central government and the colonies. This resulted in a number of political crises and civil wars in Spain. In 1868, for instance, Queen Isabella II was expelled from power and a liberal government came to power. Liberal-minded officials were then appointed to various government and colonial posts. One of these officials, Carlos Maria de la Torre, became the governor-general of the Philippines in 1869. It was during his administration that reformist and liberal ideas became prevalent in the Philippines. Governor-General de la Torre emphasized a pro-native and anti-friar government program during his term. He was enthusiastically supported by reform-minded members of the elite and the *ilustrados*, who were advocating for political reforms in the Philippine colonial government. However, de la Torre's administration lasted only two years, and he was replaced in 1871 by Rafael de Izquierdo.

Izquierdo's government was characterized by reactionary policies that eliminated several liberal policies. The reform-minded *principales* and *ilustrados* were considered a threat and were repressed. It was at this time that the issue of secularization emerged as a significant political issue. The administration of the parishes was transferred from the friars to secular priests, mostly natives, who would be under the direct authority of the Archbishop. This was bitterly contested by the friars who wished to maintain their control over the various parishes in the islands. The native priests, in turn, waged a campaign to be allowed to administer parishes in the Philippines. The secular priests found common cause with the reformists in their struggle for recognition and they supported each other in their endeavors. Meanwhile, the friars sought the support of the colonial government in opposing the secular priests.

In 1872, the Cavite Mutiny, an uprising led by the *insulares* or colony-born Spaniards serving in the Spanish Navy, was used by the colonial government as an opportunity to implicate individuals whom they considered as threats. Several reformists were arrested and accused of being the masterminds behind the mutiny.

The Propaganda Movement

The execution of Gomburza in 1872 brought about a profound change in the nationalist movement. This event may have impeded the initial movement for reforms but the deaths of the native priests brought about the awakening of a new generation of nationalists and the further growth of nationalist consciousness. This new direction in Philippine nationalism was embodied by a new breed of reformists led by Jose Rizal, Graciano Lopez Jaena, Mariano Ponce, and Marcelo H. Del Pilar, who organized and led the Propaganda Movement. The movement involved *ilustrados* residing in Spain who campaigned for political and social reforms in the Philippines. The propagandists also began to articulate their ideas on the issue of nationhood and independence.

***Ilustrado* Nationalism and Concept of Nationhood**

The propaganda movement was a significant development in Philippine nationhood, as the *ilustrado* propagandists envisioned changes not just for certain communities in the islands, but for the entire nation. The propagandists considered the Filipinos as a nation and civilization equal to that of the other great nations of the world. They accepted that the Filipino identity was a product of Spanish colonialism, and that the advancement of the Filipino nation was tied to that of Spain. But the increasing awareness of Filipinos regarding their own distinct culture and identity is an indication that the Filipino nation is moving toward independence. The propagandists, however, did not advocate revolution to achieve independence but instead advanced the notion that freedom could be achieved through

gradual stages of development. The propagandists believed that Filipinos must prepare themselves for independence through education, hard work, and citizenship.

It is based on this framework that the propagandists framed the objectives of their movement. The ilustrados advocated political liberalization and reforms in the Philippines, and sought to have the Philippines recognized as a province of Spain. The elevation of the status of the Philippines from colony to province meant that all Filipinos would enjoy the same rights and freedoms as Spanish citizens. Other objectives of the Propaganda Movement included Filipino representation in the *Cortes* or the legislative body of the Spanish government, the secularization of all parishes in the Philippines, and the implementation of social reforms.

Jose Rizal was the foremost propagandist who articulated the nationalist ideas that drove the Propaganda Movement. He advocated the view that the Filipinos had a distinct and advanced civilization during precolonial times, refuting the prevalent notion that precolonial Filipinos were barbarians. In his annotation of *Sucesos de Las Islas Filipinas* (Events in the Philippine Islands) by Spanish historian Antonio Morga, he endeavored to correct misconceptions about the Filipinos. He pointed out Spanish bias in historical accounts of the Philippines, and advocated a Filipino perspective in interpreting historical events. For Rizal, colonialism was an interruption of the development of the Filipinos, and many of the negative aspects of colonial governance has affected the Filipino character. In his essay *Filipinas dentro de cien años* (The Philippines a century hence) he traced the development of Filipino nationalism and emphasized the need for reforms to prevent a violent separation between the Philippines and Spain.

Together with the other propagandists, Jose Rizal worked to spread nationalist ideas and directly campaigned for reforms from the Spanish government. One important instrument in the movement was *La Solidaridad*, a newspaper which disseminated the ideas and views of the propagandists to the Spanish public. The primary audience of the Propaganda Movement were Spaniards, especially Spanish officials and intellectuals. Articles in the *La Solidaridad* advocated the interests of the Filipino nation. The propagandists also wrote reactions to opinions or articles of Spanish writers and scholars who were opposed to the ideas of the Filipino nationalists. The Propaganda Movement, however, also had its share of challenges and failures. Rizal eventually recognized the need to return to the Philippines, accepting the fact that the Propaganda Movement failed to achieve its objectives in its campaign in Spain. Rizal's return to the Philippines in 1892 marked a turning point in the Propaganda Movement, and ushered in a more revolutionary phase in the development of Philippine nationalism.

The *La Liga Filipina*

Upon his return to the Philippines, Jose Rizal established the *La Liga Filipina* (The Filipino League) in Tondo, Manila. The *Liga* was primarily meant to be a civic organization that would

provide mutual aid for its members, but it also involved its members in the reform movement. Jose Rizal proposed a constitution for the organization which identified the following major objectives: to encourage reforms in the country, to peacefully call on the government to end injustice and abuses, and to bring about unity among Filipinos. The constitution of the *Liga* also called for the organization of councils that would help in the realization of its goals, with members paying monthly dues to support the activities of the group. The constitution encouraged the participation of the members in political affairs and the improvement of the state. Unfortunately, the *Liga* never had the opportunity to realize its objectives as Rizal was arrested and exiled to Dapitan in July 1892.

The Katipunan and the Revolutionary Movement

After Rizal's exile to Dapitan, some members of the *Liga* reconvened to form a secret revolutionary organization, the *Kataastasang Kagalang-galangang Katipunan ng mga Anak ng Bayan* (KKK), also known as the *Katipunan*. The founders of the Katipunan included Deodato Arellano, Andres Bonifacio, and Ladislao Diwa. Unlike the previous reform and propaganda movements, the Katipunan advocated complete independence from Spain through an armed revolution.

Under the leadership of Andres Bonifacio, the Katipunan expanded its membership and organization. It brought together individuals from all walks of life – members of the elite, middle class, and the masses – who were united in their desire to fight for freedom. The organization also adopted the liberal ideals and some practices of the reform movement. Another notable influence on the Katipunan was the *La Liga Filipina*, since many of its founding members used to be part of the organization.

The Katipunan had an executive branch comprised of a Supreme Council, Provincial Council, and the Popular Council. The provincial and popular councils had jurisdiction over towns and provinces, while the Supreme Council was the highest governing body of the society. The Katipunan also had a judicial branch which settled arguments between members of the Katipunan. It also disciplined members who were found to have disobeyed the laws of the organization. The revolutionary nature of the Katipunan meant that its activities were done in secret, and recruitment was done in a manner that preserved the secrecy of the organization. The members of the society were also assigned ranks which became the basis for access to information and the assignment of responsibilities and privileges in the organization. As the society's membership expanded, a women's chapter was organized and a newspaper, the *Kalayaan*, was published. By 1896, several chapters of the Katipunan were already active throughout Manila and its neighboring districts, as well as the provinces of Bulacan, Batangas, Cavite, Nueva Ecija, Pampanga, and Laguna.

Nationalism and the Katipunan

The nationalist ideology of the Katipunan was formulated by Andres Bonifacio and Emilio Jacinto. Bonifacio presented his concept of nationhood by basing it on ethnic roots. He coined the term “katagalugan” to refer to the nation composed of all Filipino peoples, not just Tagalogs. He also advocated the use of Tagalog within the Katipunan, as the membership of the society was composed mostly of Tagalog-speakers. In his writings, Bonifacio clarified his idea of nationhood as not only consisting of Tagalog-speaking areas, but all communities and groups that aspire to fight for their independence from Spain.

The political philosophy of the Katipunan was expressed in its official documents and the writings of Bonifacio and Jacinto. Bonifacio’s *Ang Dapat Mabatid ng mga Tagalog* served as a reminder of the abuses and suffering which the people were experiencing during the Spanish regime, and called on them to fight for liberty, even if it would mean death.

Emilio Jacinto’s *Kartilya ng Katipunan* enumerated the guiding principles of the members of the Katipunan. The *Kartilya* emphasized civic virtues, such as humility, empathy, and dignity. It also highlighted values that contribute to nationhood such as equality, cooperation, mutual respect, and patriotism.

Ang Kartilya ng Katipunan

Ang kabuhayang hindi ginugugol sa isang malaki at banal na kadahilanan ay kahoy na walang lilim, kundi damong makamandag.

Ang gawang magaling na nagbubuhat sa pagpipita sa sarili, at hindi sa talagang nasang gumawa ng kagalingan, ay hindi kabaitan.

Ang tunay na kabanalan ay ang pagkakawang-gawa, ang pag-ibig sa kapwa at ang isukat ang bawat kilos, gawa't pangungusap sa talagang Katuwiran.

Maitim man at maputi ang kulay ng balat, lahat ng tao'y magkakapantay; mangyayaring ang isa'y higitan sa dunong, sa yaman, sa ganda...; ngunit di mahihigtan sa pagkatao.

Ang may mataas na kalooban, inuuna ang puri sa pagpipita sa sarili; ang may hamak na kalooban, inuuna ang pagpipita sa sarili sa puri.

Sa taong may hiya, salita'y panunumpa.

Huwag mong sasayangin ang panahon; ang yamang nawala'y mangyayaring magbalik; ngunit panahong nagdaan na'y di na muli pang magdadaan.

Ipagtanggol mo ang inaapi, at kabakahin ang umaapi.

Ang taong matalino'y ang may pag-iingat sa bawat sasabihin, at matutong ipaglihim ang dapat ipaglihim.

Sa daang matinik ng kabuhayan, lalaki ay siyang patnugot ng asawa't mga anak; kung ang umaakay ay tungo sa sama, ang patutunguhan ng iaakay ay kasamaan din.

Ang babae ay huwag mong tingnang isang bagay na libangan lamang, kundi isang katuwang at karamay sa mga kahirapan nitong kabuhayan; gamitan mo ng buong pagpipitagan ang kaniyang kahinaan, at alalahanin ang inang pinagbuhata't nag-iwi sa iyong kasangulan.

Ang hindi mo ibig na gawin sa asawa mo, anak at kapatid, ay huwag mong gagawin sa asawa, anak, at kapatid ng iba.

Ang kamahalan ng tao'y wala sa pagkahari, wala sa tangus ng ilong at puti ng mukha, wala sa pagkaparing KAHALILI NG DIYOS, wala sa mataas na kalagayan sa balat ng lupa; wagas at tunay na mahal na tao, kahit laking gubat at walang nababatid kundi ang sariling wika, yaong may magandang asal, may isang pangungusap, may dangal at puri; yaong hindi napaaapi't hindi nakikiapi; yaong marunong magdamdam at marunong lumingap sa bayang tinubuan.

The sentiments and ideas expressed in the Kartilya echoed those of Rizal, who advocated the involvement of citizens in national affairs. However, the Kartilya is notable for having advocated a notion of nationhood and citizenship that encompassed all communities in the Philippines. In an initial passage of the Kartilya, Tagalog citizens were characterized as “*ang lahat ng tumubo sa Sangkapuluang ito; sa makatuwid, Bisaya man, Iloko man, Kapampangan man... ay Tagalog din.*”

The Outbreak of the Revolution and the Tejeros Convention

The discovery of the Katipunan by the guardia civil in June 1896 hastened the organization’s plans for armed revolution. The colonial government’s reaction to the planned rebellion was swift. Several members of the Katipunan were arrested while some were forced into hiding. It was during this uncertain period that Bonifacio and the rest of the Katipunan decided to proceed with the planned uprising. The Philippine Revolution began in August 1896, but Bonifacio’s forces were unable to secure victory in the initial battles within Manila. The neighboring provinces fared much better in the armed struggle. In particular, the province of Cavite was one of the most active fronts in the revolutionary struggle, with General Emilio Aguinaldo leading the revolutionary forces to victory.

The Katipunan in Cavite was divided into the Magdiwang and Magdalo factions. The Magdiwang was led by Mariano Alvarez, while the Magdalo was headed by Baldomero Aguinaldo. In 1897, the fighting shifted to the provinces and Cavite became an important center of the revolution. In the face of growing Spanish offensives, the Katipunan convened in Tejeros in order to reorganize and establish a united front against the Spaniards. Andres Bonifacio was invited by the Magdiwang faction to preside over the convention. The conveners agreed to dissolve the Katipunan and replace it with a revolutionary government. It was followed by an election of officials in which Gen. Emilio Aguinaldo was named President. The Tejeros Convention marked an important transition for the Revolution. The revolutionaries decided that the aims of the revolution could no longer be achieved by the Katipunan, a secret revolutionary society. What was needed was the establishment of a revolutionary government that would bring about the achievement of independence from Spain.

With the establishment of the revolutionary government, the following were elected officials:

President	Emilio Aguinaldo
Vice President	Mariano Trias
Captain General	Artemio Ricarte
Director of War	Emiliano Riego de Dios
Director of Interior	Andres Bonifacio

The convention was also intended to end the rivalry between the Magdiwang and Magdalo factions. However, the elections at the Tejeros Convention were disrupted due to an altercation that ensued when Daniel Tirona questioned the election of Andres Bonifacio as Director of Interior. Bonifacio was offended at this personal slight. Bonifacio then declared the results of the Tejeros Convention invalid.

This incident caused a rift within the revolutionary movement, and Bonifacio and his supporters organized a separate government through the Naic Pact. Aguinaldo and his supporters, meanwhile, considered Bonifacio's actions as treason and moved to arrest him. On April 27, 1897, Bonifacio, his brother Procopio, and Gregoria de Jesus were arrested and brought to face trial. Bonifacio and Procopio were found guilty and executed. The death of Bonifacio marked the official end of the Katipunan. The society had served as a *de facto* government for the members of the revolutionary organization from 1892 to 1897. A new revolutionary leadership under Emilio Aguinaldo emerged and continued the struggle against the Spaniards.

The Revolutionary Government up to the Biak-na-Bato Republic

The events of 1897 brought about a new revolutionary government that formally replaced the old Katipunan government. Aguinaldo inaugurated the “Pamahalaan ng Sangkatagalugan” composed of the following officials:

President	Emilio Aguinaldo
Vice President	Mariano Trias
Director of the Interior	Pascual Alvarez
Director of Finance	Baldomero Aguinaldo
Director of Development	Mariano Alvarez
Director of State	Jacinto Lumbreras
Director of Justice	Severino de las Alas
Director of War	Emiliano Riego de Jesus
Captain General	Artemio Ricarte

But the execution of the Supremo of the Katipunan had a significant impact on the morale of the revolutionaries. As a result, the Spanish forces were able to score several victories. The revolutionary forces in Cavite were forced to evacuate after a massive Spanish counter-offensive. Aguinaldo and his government retreated to the mountains of Biak-na-Bato in Bulacan, near the Cordilleras.

At this point, Aguinaldo established a republican government, referred to as the Biak-na-Bato Republic. The new republic was organized based on a constitution which reflected the ideals of the revolution. The Biak-na-Bato constitution was the first formal constitution drafted in the Philippines. Its preamble expressed the sentiment of the revolutionaries, who sought to separate from the Spanish monarchy and establish a Philippine republic in accordance with the wishes of the Filipino people. The constitution also established a centralized government, with a Supreme Council composed of a President and several cabinet officials. The Supreme Council performed both executive and legislative functions, including the passage and implementation of the laws of the Republic. The following were the officials elected into the Supreme Council:

President	Emilio Aguinaldo
Vice President	Mariano Trias
Secretary of Foreign Affairs	Antonio Montenegro
Secretary of the Interior	Isabelo Artacho
Secretary of War	Emiliano Riego De Dios
Secretary of the Treasury	Baldomero Aguinaldo

With the establishment of the Biak-na-Bato Republic, revolutionary forces experienced a resurgence and many from nearby provinces rallied in support of Aguinaldo. This led to a stalemate between the Filipino forces and the Spaniards. Negotiations were initiated and a peace agreement, the Pact of Biak-na-Bato, was signed on November 18, 1897.

Towards the Creation of a Philippine Republic

The signing of the Pact of Biak-na-Bato ended the hostilities between the Filipinos and the Spaniards. The Biak-na-Bato Republic also came to an end as Aguinaldo and his government voluntarily went into exile in Hongkong, as was agreed upon in the pact. The remaining revolutionary leaders and their forces were given amnesty and absorbed into the Spanish colonial military force. The truce however, did not last. Both sides violated many of the terms of the agreement. Spanish officials arrested many of the Filipino revolutionaries despite the guarantee of amnesty. On the other hand, many Filipino fighters did not surrender their arms to the government. Aguinaldo's government-in-exile, meanwhile, planned to use the money given to them by the Spaniards to purchase arms and ammunition, expecting an eventual return to the Philippines and the resumption of the revolution. Events on the other side of the world, meanwhile, would set off a series of events that led to the revival of the Philippine Revolution.

In 1898, war between Spain and America broke out, and the conflict was a significant factor in the succeeding political developments in the Philippines.

The Spanish-American War and American Imperialism

By the end of the 19th century, the United States of America emerged as a new political and military power in global affairs. The desire of the US government to expand its territory and gain more political power drove it to engage in colonial ventures. The United States also expanded its political and economic interests in nearby regions in the Caribbean. In particular, the US expressed great interest in the Spanish colony of Cuba. American businessmen were engaged in a profitable trade with Cuba's sugar industry, and business interests soon drove the US government to take an interest in political developments in the colony. When Cuban revolutionaries led a war for independence in 1895, American public opinion supported the struggle of the Cubans, and many Americans urged their government to directly intervene in the conflict. The Spanish government protested US interference in their affairs, and this led to strained relations between the two countries.

The feud worsened when the *USS Maine* was blown up at Havana harbor in Cuba in February 1898. The vessel was sent to Cuba by the United States in order to safeguard American citizens and business interests. The US government accused the Spaniards of blowing up the ship. Though an investigation turned up no evidence to prove this, the Americans used the incident to push the government to wage war against Spain. The United States finally declared war against Spain in April, and this led to the Spanish-American War. With the outbreak of the Spanish-American War, Aguinaldo and his government-in-exile in Hong Kong saw an opportunity to return to the Philippines and revive the revolution. Meanwhile, American officials got in touch with Aguinaldo and convinced him to cooperate with them in defeating the Spaniards. The Americans were said to have promised Aguinaldo that they had no desire to acquire the Philippines as a colony.

On May 1, 1898, Commodore George Dewey led the United States Asiatic Squadron and defeated the Spanish Navy in the Battle of Manila Bay. Due to the Americans' lack of land forces to take the Philippines, the Americans initially sought the cooperation of Aguinaldo's forces. A combined American-Filipino force defeated the Spaniards in the Battle of Manila on August 13, 1898. However, this battle is believed to have been staged. The Americans had earlier made a secret agreement with the Spaniards to surrender the Philippines to them. The Americans then established a military government in the Philippines, and over the next few months additional American troops arrived and set up camp in Manila and Cavite. The actions of the Americans convinced the Filipinos that the United States intended to occupy the Philippines. Aguinaldo and the other revolutionaries, therefore, were driven to establish an independent republic that would bring about the recognition of Philippine independence.

The Declaration of Independence and the First Philippine Republic

The return of Aguinaldo to the Philippines in May 1898 signaled the revival of the Philippine Revolution. On May 24, he declared a dictatorial government which was intended to facilitate the swift execution of orders and implementation of policies. The dictatorship was intended to be temporary, as a new government will be established at the end of the war with Spain. News of Aguinaldo's arrival spurred the Filipino revolutionaries into action. They took up arms once again and fought the Spaniards. By June 1898, Filipinos had taken control of the whole island of Luzon, while the Spaniards held on to Manila and the port of Cavite. On June 12, 1898, Aguinaldo proclaimed the independence of the Philippines. A few days later, he abolished the dictatorial government and established a revolutionary government which he headed. The following were appointed as officials in his cabinet:

Secretary of War	Baldomero Aguinaldo
Director of War	Antonio Luna
Generals of Divisions	Artemio Ricarte, Vito Belarmino, Emiliano Riego de Dios
Brigadier Generals	Tomas Mascardo, Pantaleon Garcia, Mariano Llanera, Mariano Noriel, Isidoro Torres, Miguel Malvar, Paciano, Rizal, Pascual Alvarez, Jose Ignacio Paua, Pio del Pilar, Gregorio del Pilar, Francisco Makabulos
Secretary of Interior	Leandro Ibarra
Director of Interior	Severino de las Alas
Secretary of Foreign Relations	Cayetano Arellano
Director of Foreign Relations	Trinidad H. Pardo de Tavera
Secretary of Finance	Mariano Trias
Director of Finance	Benito Legarda
General Treasurer	Silvestre Legaspi
Navy Director	Pascual Ledesma
Commerce Director	Esteban de la Rama
Secretary of Justice	Gregorio Araneta
Director of Justice	Jose Ma. Basa
Director of Registry	Juan Tongco

Secretary of Fomento	Felipe Buencamino
Director of Public Instruction	Arsenio Cruz Herrera
Director of Public Works	Fernando Canon Faustino
Director of Agriculture and Industry	Jose Alejandrino
Director of Communication	Jose Vales
Director of Hygiene	Jose Albert

With the establishment of his cabinet, Aguinaldo issued decrees that provided for the reorganization of local government in the provinces already freed from Spanish control. The decree also provided a mechanism for the election of local chiefs for the towns and provinces, as well as the selection of officials for the town and provincial councils. Also, the decree provided that each province would elect delegates who would serve as representatives in the Revolutionary Congress. Another decree reorganized the judiciary. The town chief was appointed judge of the town and was tasked to investigate criminal cases. The provincial council, meanwhile, examined these cases and oversaw the trials. A popular assembly rendered decisions on civil cases. The Aguinaldo government also continued to recognize the Spanish Penal Code as the basis for the administration of justice in the country.

In September 1898, Aguinaldo called on the delegates from the provinces to gather as a Revolutionary Congress in Malolos, Bulacan. However, the peace and order situation and the political uncertainty during that period meant that most provinces outside of Luzon were unable to send delegates. Thus, Aguinaldo was compelled to appoint several delegates to represent these provinces. On September 15, 1898, the Malolos Congress was inaugurated and began the task of passing laws that would establish an independent Philippine government. On September 29, the Congress ratified the Declaration of Independence. The delegates then decided to draft a constitution. The Congress believed that the creation of a modern constitution was needed to secure legitimacy for the Aguinaldo government as well as gain recognition from other foreign states. The Malolos Congress began deliberations on a draft constitution in October 1898 and in January 1899, the final version of the constitution was submitted to Aguinaldo for his approval. On January 21, 1899, the Malolos Constitution was approved and promulgated.

Historians consider the Malolos Congress as an assembly that was truly diverse ethnically and politically. The Malolos Constitution, therefore, was the first code of laws in the country that was created, deliberated, and approved from a national perspective. The Malolos Constitution provided for a republican government with the legislative branch

having considerably more power than the executive and judiciary. The legislative branch was a unicameral Assembly which had the power to elect the President and the Chief Justice. Meanwhile, the executive branch was comprised of the President and his Cabinet, while the judicial branch was composed of the Supreme Court headed by the Chief Justice, and had jurisdiction over lower courts.

Aside from the creation of the three branches of government, the Malolos constitution also promulgated other important aspects of nationhood, citizenship, and sovereignty. A citizen of the Philippines was no longer referred to as a Tagalog, but was called a Filipino. The qualifications for being regarded as a citizen of the Philippines were also broadened. Citizens who were naturalized and those born overseas to Filipino parents were considered as Filipinos. Lastly, but most importantly, the Malolos Constitution recognized the sovereignty of the Filipino masses.

The Malolos Constitution paved the way for the establishment of the First Philippine Republic, which was inaugurated in Malolos on January 23, 1899. Unfortunately, despite the efforts of Aguinaldo and his government, the republic faced serious challenges upon its inception. One significant limitation to the republic was the territorial boundaries of the republic which were not defined by the Malolos Constitution. The other, more practical challenges that confronted the Philippine republic. For instance, there were groups of Filipinos who considered accepting a protectorate under American sovereignty. The Aguinaldo government also experienced challenges in their relations with the non-Tagalog provinces. Many Bicolanos and Visayans were offended by the arrogance exhibited by the Tagalog officials who were assigned to govern their areas.

Legitimacy also became a primary issue with the republic. Other Filipino communities did not recognize Aguinaldo's government and rejected the Philippine republic. Examples were the Negros Republic, which had established a separate, independent state with its own constitution; and the Sultanate of Sulu, which did not respond to Aguinaldo's invitation to become part of the republic. The republic also failed to gain the recognition of foreign states despite diplomatic efforts initiated by the Filipino community in Hong Kong and Japan.

Further complicating matters were the peace negotiations between Spain and the United States. In August 1898, a protocol of peace was signed which provided for Spanish and American peace commissions to meet in Paris and discuss the terms of a peace treaty. The negotiations between the two nations began in October 1898. Though Aguinaldo sent Filipino representatives to lobby for the recognition of Philippine independence in Washington, they were not recognized as official diplomats and were unable to meet with the American president. The Filipino delegation then proceeded to Paris but officials from both the Spanish and American peace commissions were unwilling to meet with them. On December 10, 1898, the Treaty of Paris was signed by Spain and the United States, ending the Spanish-American War. Spain surrendered the Philippines to the United States, along with its other colonies in the Pacific.

The treaty, therefore, was considered the primary basis of the validity of US sovereignty over the Philippines.

Despite this significant setback, Aguinaldo and his government continued to assert the independence and sovereignty of the Philippine republic. The outbreak of hostilities between the Filipinos and Americans in 1899, however, brought about the end of the First Philippine Republic and ushered in a new period of Philippine colonialism under American sovereignty.

RECALL

- Precolonial politics and governance were centered on the barangay and the sultanate. The barangay was composed of communities led by a datu. They were defined by a fierce independence and a distinct communal and cultural identity. Barangays also interacted with other communities through trade, warfare, and alliances. The sultanates, meanwhile, emerged as powerful polities in Mindanao. They were characterized by a strong central authority under the leadership of a sultan. The Sultanate of Sulu and the Sultanate of Maguindanao were the most influential sultanates in Mindanao. A third sultanate was said to have emerged in the Kingdom of Maynilad in Luzon.
- The arrival of the Spaniards in the Philippines in 1521 brought about the establishment of a colonial government in the islands. The communities of the Philippines were reorganized and brought under the control of a colonial government under the authority of Spain. Colonial governance was defined by goals and policies defined by the Spanish government. The precolonial elite were given an opportunity to become leaders in colonial society, and they served as public officials in the towns and barangays.
- The colonial administration of the Philippines centered on the office of the governor-general. He was the highest colonial official in the Philippines and the representative of the Spanish monarch in the country. The governor-general performed executive, legislative, and judicial functions, and was also the commander-in-chief of the military. He ensured proper administration of laws, peace and order and the collection of taxes from the citizens. The colonial government in the Philippines was under the authority of the Viceroyalty of New Spain which, in turn, was administered by a council that advised the Spanish monarch.

- Colonial governance in the Philippines experienced several challenges. Most significant among these were the rampant corruption and abuse of authority by colonial officials. The vast distance between the Philippines and New Spain also resulted in difficulties in communication which made administration difficult. The rampant abuses experienced by the natives gave rise to several revolts.
- The early revolts initiated by the natives were the first indications of a growing popular sentiment among them. They desired to seek redress for abuses, which gave way to aspirations for independence from Spain. These initial revolts, however, were limited in scope as they only involved a few provinces and communities, and the people themselves were not truly united by a common sentiment and sense of nationhood.
- Historical developments in the 18th century brought about social and economic changes that gave rise to the emergence of a social class that embraced liberal ideas and called for reforms in colonial governance. The reform movement of the 19th century included members from the elite, the middle class, and Spaniards born in the Philippines. Their common cause gave rise to a feeling of solidarity and community among them.
- It was during the Propaganda Movement that Filipino intellectuals called *ilustrados* articulated the nationalist sentiments of Filipinos. Jose Rizal and the other propagandists worked together to spread nationalist ideals and push for reforms in the colonial government.
- The end of the Propaganda Movement ushered in the revolutionary period when Filipino nationalism was now oriented toward achieving full independence from Spain. Bonifacio's ideas on the Katagalugan advanced the notion that the Filipino nation included all communities that desired and fought for independence against Spain.
- The outbreak of the Philippine Revolution in 1896 was a turning point in Philippine nationalism. The Filipino revolutionaries now began the task of organizing a government that will bring their nationalist and revolutionary ideals into reality. The 1899 Malolos constitution was the culmination of the nationalist struggle for independence and it established a sovereign government for all Filipinos.

EXAMINE

A. Identify the following.

- _____ 1. This is the leader of the barangay.
- _____ 2. According to this ideology, the power of a country is based on the number of territories it conquers and the colonies it establishes.
- _____ 3. This is the ruling elite class during the Spanish colonial period.
- _____ 4. This is the judiciary of the Philippines during the Spanish period.
- _____ 5. This movement involved native priests campaigning for their right to administer parishes in the country.
- _____ 6. This was organized in 1892 to provide mutual aid for its members and participate in the reform movement.
- _____ 7. This is the term which Andres Bonifacio used to refer to the Filipino nation.
- _____ 8. Bonifacio deemed the results of this election invalid, causing tensions in the revolutionary movement.
- _____ 9. This is the first formal constitution drafted in the Philippines.
- _____ 10. This constitution paved way for the establishment of the First Philippine Republic.

B. Write T if the statement is true; write F if the statement is false.

- _____ 1. The precolonial barangays did not establish political-military alliances with one another.
- _____ 2. Political legitimacy in sultanates was based on blood and religious ties.
- _____ 3. During the Spanish period, barangays were all converted into pueblos, regardless of their size.
- _____ 4. Many of the old ruling elites were no longer incorporated into the new colonial state under the Spaniards as local administrators.
- _____ 5. Since there was no formal legislative body in the Philippines during the Spanish colonial period, many of the laws in the country were enacted by the King of Spain.

- _____ 6. The *insulares* were the full-blooded Spaniards who were born in the Philippines.
- _____ 7. The revolutionary movement's idea of nationhood encompassed not only the Tagalog people, but all those who were born in the Philippines and participating in the fight against Spanish colonization.
- _____ 8. The Pact of Biak-na-Bato resulted in Aguinaldo and the revolutionary government going into exile in Hong Kong.
- _____ 9. The Malolos Constitution granted more power to the judiciary branch than the executive and legislative branches.
- _____ 10. The First Philippine Republic failed to gain recognition from foreign states.

C. Answer the following questions.

1. What factors led to the emergency of the barangay and sultanate as political entities during the precolonial period?

2. How did colonialism transform politics and governance in the Philippines during the Spanish conquest?

3. How did the propagandists and revolutionaries differ in their notion of nationhood and their approaches in achieving Philippine independence?

4. What is the significance of the Malolos Constitution in Philippine politics?

5. What issues and challenges were encountered by the First Philippine Republic?

ANALYZE

A. Trace the development of nationhood from precolonial times up to the Philippine Revolution. Describe significant aspects of nationhood that emerged in each period. Write them in the spaces provided in the table below.

Period	Nationhood
Precolonial	
Spanish Colonial Period	
Propaganda Movement	
Philippine Revolution	

B. Read and discuss the following excerpt from the Declaration of Independence:

...the people of this country are already tired of bearing the ominous yoke of Spanish domination,

Because of arbitrary arrests and abuses of the Civil Guards who cause deaths in connivance with and even under the express orders of their superior officers who at times would order the shooting of those placed under arrest under the pretext that they attempted to escape in violation of known Rules and Regulations, which abuses left unpunished, and because of unjust deportations of illustrious Filipinos...carried out through processes more execrable than those of the Inquisition which every civilized nation repudiates as a trial without hearing,

Had resolved to start a revolution in August 1896 in order to regain the independence and sovereignty of which the people had been deprived by Spain...

And having as witness to the rectitude of our intentions the Supreme Judge of the Universe, and under the protection of the Powerful and Humanitarian Nation, the United States of America, we do hereby proclaim and declare solemnly in the name of and by the authority of the people of these Philippine Islands,

That they are and have the right to be free and independent; that they have ceased to have any allegiance to the Crown of Spain; that all political ties between them are and should be completely severed and annulled; and that, like other free and independent States, they enjoy the full power to make War and Peace, conclude commercial treaties, enter into alliances, regulate commerce, and do all other acts and things which an independent State has a right to do,

And imbued with firm confidence in Divine Providence, we hereby mutually bind ourselves to support this Declaration with our lives, our fortunes, and with our most sacred possession, our Honor.

Discussion Questions

1. How did the Declaration justify the revolution against Spain?
2. What ideas regarding sovereignty were expressed in the Declaration?
3. In what way did the Declaration assert the legitimacy of the revolution and Philippine independence?

C. Look up a copy of the Malolos Constitution. You may access a copy from the lawphil.net website (<http://www.lawphil.net/consti/cons malo.html>). Analyze the constitution and discuss the following questions.

1. What type of government was established by the Malolos Constitution? Describe its significant aspects.
2. How did the constitution embody recognition of individual rights and liberties? Choose one right and discuss.
3. What political ideologies are evident in the constitution? Choose one provision and discuss the ideology that influenced it.
4. What were the significant powers given to the state? What system of checks and balances were implemented?
5. What ideas embodied in the constitution are still evident in our present government?

EMPOWER

- A. Research on the life and works of a Filipino propagandist or revolutionary. Discuss how his or her works and ideas contributed to the development of Filipino nationhood. Present the information you have gathered and your discussion in a report.**
- B. Research on the local history of your province and trace the developments that defined the growth of your local government. Identify notable leaders and personalities that have contributed to the growth of your community and discuss their achievements.**

Lesson 6

PHILIPPINE POLITICS IN THE 20TH CENTURY

ENGAGE

American colonialism introduced dramatic changes to Philippine politics. Despite being under a colonial power, Filipinos were given the opportunity to participate in politics and governance in anticipation of eventual independence. Political developments during this period trained Filipinos in running a government. The period also marked the rise of a political elite which had roots in the *principalia*. The Americans eventually gave them greater authority and increasing responsibilities through the decades. The establishment of the Philippine Commonwealth in 1935 marked the transition towards a definite path to independence. The outbreak of the Second World War and the Japanese occupation of the Philippines interrupted this transition, as another colonial government was established by the Japanese. The end of the war resulted in the realization of independence for the Philippines in 1946. However, the Philippine republic faced not only the challenges of recovery from the war, but also neocolonialism, government corruption, and social inequality. Various administrations attempted several solutions to these problems, with the Marcos administration resorting to an authoritarian government in an attempt to change Philippine society and politics. In 1986, a popular revolt toppled the Marcos dictatorship and democracy in the government was restored.

At the end of the lesson, students are expected to answer the following questions:

1. What influenced the Americans to implement political changes in the Philippines?
2. What role did Filipinos play in the establishment of a civil government during the American colonial period?
3. What developments enabled Filipinos to have greater participation in politics and governance?
4. What is the significance of the Philippine Commonwealth to the Philippine quest for independence?
5. How did the Japanese use the Philippine government to achieve its aims?

6. What challenges did the Philippines face upon its independence from the United States?
7. How did historical developments influence the growth and evolution of Philippine politics and governance?

Discuss

The American Colonial Administration

The signing and ratification of the Treaty of Paris in 1898 officially transferred sovereignty over the Philippines from the Spaniards to the Americans. Despite the proclamation of a Philippine Republic by President Aguinaldo, the United States and the other countries did not recognize its existence. The Filipino resistance, therefore, was considered an “insurgency” against the US government, and the revolutionaries were labeled as “troublemakers” and “bandits”. The United States Government was able to effectively extend its sovereignty over the islands at the end of the Philippine-American War in 1902, with many of the Filipino revolutionary forces surrendering to the US Army, and the ceasing of major military operations in the country.

Establishment of Civil Government

Even before the end of the military conflict between the Filipinos and the Americans, the United States had undertaken the task of establishing a colonial government in the Philippines. Two commissions were sent by the US government to study the political conditions in the Philippines, propose legislation and reforms, and organize a civil government that will apply the proposed changes.

The First Philippine Commission headed by Jacob Schurman arrived in the Philippines in 1899 to conduct its survey of the country. The commission met with members of the Filipino elite and representatives of the Aguinaldo government in an effort to identify the best means to establish American rule over the Filipinos. The commission also proclaimed the intentions of the United States in the Philippines, and it assured the Filipino people that it did not intend to exploit them but rather to help the country develop and establish a democratic government that would bring about progress.

The second Philippine Commission was established in 1900 and was headed by William Howard Taft. Initially, the Commission took on both the executive and legislative tasks of the colonial government in the Philippines. The Commission also acquired the services of the Filipino elite in several aspects and branches of the government. For example, Filipino

politicians and lawmakers such as Trinidad H. Pardo de Tavera, Benito Legarda, and Jose de Luzuriaga were appointed to the Philippine Commission. As for the Judiciary, the Supreme Court was reorganized with Cayetano Arellano as the first Chief Justice.

At the end of the Filipino-American War, the United States government formalized its efforts to establish a colonial government and promulgated the Philippine Act of 1902. This act became the legal basis for the political changes implemented by the colonizers. Under this law, the Philippines was placed under the administration of the Bureau of Insular Affairs, which in turn was under the War Department of the United States. The law also stipulated that a census of the Filipino population must take place; this happened in 1903, after a year of “complete peace” was observed in the islands.

More reforms were made in the colonial government over the next few years. The Philippine Assembly was formed in 1907 and Filipino lawmakers were elected into office to serve in the assembly. The Philippine Assembly formed the lower house of the legislative branch, and Sergio Osmeña was elected the first Speaker of the House. The Philippine Commission, which was mostly composed of American officials, was the upper house of the legislature. This commission represented the interests of the US administration in the Philippines. All laws passed by the Philippine Assembly required the concurrence and approval of the Philippine Commission before they could be enacted and implemented.

Aside from this, Filipinos were granted the power to govern provinces. In 1901, the Commission enacted Act No. 82 which reorganized provincial governments across the archipelago, and Act No. 83 which reorganized the municipal governments. Filipinos were encouraged to participate in the local government units. Many former generals of the first Philippine Republic were, after being granted amnesty, offered the chance to become the first Filipino provincial governors in their home provinces. Many other leaders of the Philippine revolution, as well as former officials under Spanish rule, were incorporated into the local governments either as town mayors or municipal presidents. For areas in Muslim Mindanao and the Mountain Provinces, the Americans sent specialized civil-military commissions in order to integrate the citizens of these areas into the new American colonial state.

Another factor that contributed to the rise of Filipino participation in politics during the American period was the emergence of political parties. During the Filipino-American War and the early years of the American colonial government, the issue of independence was initially a taboo subject. Propaganda and rhetoric advocating independence were restricted, and the only political party officially recognized by the government – the Partido Federal – sought to have the Philippines absorbed as a regular state of the United States. The end of hostilities and the establishment of civil rule, however, led the Americans to be more open to politicians who advocated independence. And thus in 1907, the Nacionalista Party was established and it advocated total independence from the United States. Political leaders such as Sergio Osmeña, Sr. and Manuel L. Quezon led the Nacionalista Party to advocate for independence through legal and political means.

Filipinization and the Road to Independence

In 1910 a transition was experienced in American politics as the Democratic Party replaced the Republicans in Washington. The Democratic Party continued the efforts in training the Filipinos for governance by bringing in more Filipinos to serve in the government. Gov. Gen. Francis Burton Harrison encouraged them to actively participate in the government and advocated a Filipinization policy in which Filipinos gradually replaced American bureaucrats in government offices. The promotion of Filipinization resulted in the rise of Filipino politicians such as Manuel L. Quezon, Manuel A. Roxas, and Sergio Osmeña, who went on to become influential political leaders of the country.

In 1916 the Philippine Autonomy Act or Jones Law was passed. It provided for changes in the civil government in anticipation of eventual independence. This law abolished the Philippine Commission and made significant changes in the legislative and executive branches of the government. The legislative branch was transformed with the creation of a bicameral Philippine legislature. The Senate was the upper house, composed of 24 senators representing then 12 regions in the Philippines. Two additional senators from the non-Christian communities were also appointed by the Governor-General. The lower house was the House of Representatives, with congressmen representing electoral districts all over the Philippines. While the executive branch was still led by the Governor-General, he was assisted by a cabinet composed mostly of Filipino officials. This new arrangement allowed Quezon and Osmeña to further dominate Philippine politics, and even the Americans relied on the two politicians for advice on various political matters.

In 1921, Gov. Gen. Leonard Wood attempted to scale back the progress of Filipinization in an effort to reassert American control over the Filipinos. Filipino leaders, however, resisted Wood's efforts and this resulted in tense relations between the Governor-General and Filipino officials. In 1923, a conflict broke out between Wood and the Filipino politicians when the Governor-General intervened in a case involving an American police officer accused of misconduct. Interior Secretary Jose P. Laurel dismissed the erring officer but Wood ordered Laurel to reinstate him in service. Laurel resigned in protest of Wood's interference. This prompted other Filipino officials in the cabinet to resign in support of Laurel and to express their discontent with Wood. Disagreements between the Filipino politicians and the Governor-General continued, and these prompted the Filipinos to campaign for independence from the US so that they could be given the chance to manage their own political affairs. The Filipinos, however, faced an uphill battle as the Americans were still opposed to an immediate grant of independence.

The Philippine Commonwealth

The declaration of eventual independence for the Philippines in the 1916 Jones Law provided Filipino politicians with the motivation to embark on a campaign to secure independence for the country. In 1918, the Philippine legislature established

an independence commission to campaign for independence and negotiate with the US government. The Nacionalista Party was a major political force in the independence movement, and many Nacionalista politicians were active in the independence commission. The first independence mission was sent to the US in 1919, and was followed by several missions throughout the 1920s. Despite the efforts of the Filipinos, the political climate in the United States was not conducive to discussions regarding Philippine independence. The Americans were of the opinion that the Philippines had not yet achieved the optimal level of political, social, and economic progress that would indicate readiness for independence. There was also disagreement among Filipino politicians regarding their views on independence. Manuel Quezon himself faced accusations that he was merely using the issue of independence and nationalism as a tool to advance his political career, and that he changed his stance on independence depending on which views were more favorable to him. Despite these challenges, the independence commission continued in its effort to secure independence from the United States.

The Philippine Independence Acts

The 1930s brought about a significant development in the campaign for independence. In the United States, the economic difficulties brought about by the Depression convinced many businessmen and politicians that granting the Philippines independence may be a solution to the economic problems in American markets. The independence commission saw an opportunity and in 1931, sent the Os-Rox Mission, led by Sergio Osmeña and Manuel Roxas, to lobby for Philippine independence in the US Congress.

The mission succeeded in securing the Philippine Independence Act of 1933, or the Hare-Hawes-Cutting Act. This law set a ten-year preparatory period for Philippine independence. During this period, a transition government or Commonwealth would be established which would be led by Filipinos. Through the efforts of Osmeña and Roxas, the act was finally passed into law by the US Congress. But when the law was submitted to the Philippines for approval, it encountered opposition from Manuel Quezon. He objected to the provision of a ten-year preparatory period before total Philippine independence would be granted. He was also against the provision which allowed the retention of US military bases in the Philippines; this meant that the US would still be present in the country even after it became politically independent.

Quezon used his political influence to convince the Philippine Congress to reject the Hare-Hawes-Cutting Act. He then proceeded to the United States in a desire to obtain a “better” law for the Philippines. Quezon did secure another Philippine Independence Act in 1934 known as the Tydings-McDuffie Law. However, it was no different from the previous law, except for the provision on American bases in the Philippines which changed from “military” to “naval” bases. Nevertheless, as head of the Nacionalista Party, Quezon easily got the Tydings-McDuffie Act ratified by the Philippine legislature on May 1, 1934.

The 1935 Philippine Constitution and the Philippine Commonwealth

With the ratification of the Tydings-McDuffie Act, the Philippine government started preparing for the creation of a constitution that would cover the duration from the planned ten-year preparatory period (or the Commonwealth period) to post-independence. In order to accomplish this, a Constitutional Convention was formed. It was comprised of 202 delegates and was headed by Claro M. Recto. The 1934 constitutional convention was the second time that Filipinos convened to make a Philippine constitution. The political conditions surrounding this convention, however, were radically different from that of the 1898 Malolos Congress. The constitutional convention had recognition and support from the US, with the American government itself having guaranteed the eventual independence of the Philippines. The new constitution was also created in a climate of relative peace and progress, with Filipino political leaders hopeful of the eventual possibility of full independence from the United States.

On February 8, 1935, the constitutional convention finally approved the constitution, and it was also approved by US President Franklin D. Roosevelt on March 23. It was ratified by a plebiscite on May 14, 1935. The 1935 Constitution established the Commonwealth government with eventual independence in mind. A presidential system was adopted for the Commonwealth. The President was the head of the executive branch and had a term of six years without a re-election. A unicameral legislature, the National Assembly, was established with representatives elected from each province in the Philippines. The judiciary was composed of a Supreme Court and other lower courts. The constitution also provided for a Bill of Rights as well as a system of checks and balances between the three branches of government. Later amendments to the constitution in 1940 provided for a bicameral legislature with a Senate and House of Representatives. There were also changes in the term of office of the President – the chief executive could now serve two consecutive four-year terms.

The constitution also provided for continuing relations between the Philippine Commonwealth and the US government. Despite having complete control over their political affairs, the United States still had control over foreign policy and military affairs. The decisions of the Supreme Court of the Philippines were also subject to review by the US Supreme Court. An office of the High Commissioner was established which acted as the representative of the US President in the Philippines. A Resident Commissioner was also appointed by the Philippine President to represent Philippine interests in the US Congress.

The Commonwealth under President Quezon

Quezon implemented various laws during his Presidency that were aimed at strengthening the Philippines as a nation and improving the government. For instance, he promulgated Commonwealth Act No. 1, or the National Defense Act, to secure a reservist citizen army for the defense of the Philippines in times of war. The National Defense Act created the Philippine Army, the Philippine Military Academy, and the Philippine Military Training Program. Quezon also envisioned the creation of a new city which would house

the government offices, and would be the future capital in place of Manila. In case of war, Quezon reasoned, Manila would be prone to naval bombardment. Quezon City, named after the President, would later be the capital of the Philippines in 1948, a few years after his death.

To develop the concept of Philippine nationhood and national homogeneity, Quezon also launched a national language project. Quezon organized the National Language Commission to undertake the task of creating a single national linguistic identity for the Filipinos. This was at first planned to be achieved through “developing and adopting” a national language, which would integrate the vocabulary of the various languages and dialects in the Philippines. Eventually, the commission chose Tagalog as the basis for the national language, which would later on be called Filipino.

Many historians considered the administration of Quezon as a virtual dictatorship. Apart from the powers given to him by the 1935 constitution, Quezon exercised great influence over Filipino politicians in the Nacionalista Party, and even over American officials assigned to the Philippines. It was said that Quezon effectively used patronage as a means to ensure the loyalty of politicians and officials. He was the recognized authority within the Nacionalista Party, and his influence muted opposition in the legislature. Lastly, Quezon was said to have connections to bureaucrats and legal experts who ensured his political power over the Philippines. These experts were believed to have helped him implement whatever policy or order he decreed. Thus, he was able to amend the constitution in 1940 to allow the reelection of a currently serving President. He also restored the bicameral setup of the legislature with 24 senators elected nationally rather than regionally, and was able to name those who would be members of the Senate. These developments alarmed some American officials, particularly High Commissioner Francis Sayre, who considered Quezon’s increased power in Philippine politics as an “exceeding danger to democracy.”

However, despite Quezon’s unprecedented political authority and influence over Philippine politics, his government still faced significant challenges. The most pressing of these concerns was the issue of free trade with the United States. When the Philippines was a colony of the US, its products enjoyed preferential status and was able to enter US markets with reduced tariffs. These privileges, however, were revoked upon the establishment of the Commonwealth, and the Philippines was treated as a separate economy and market. This meant that Philippine products, particularly agricultural goods, would have to pay increased tariff and compete with other imported products in the US. The economic dependence of the Philippines on US markets meant that the Filipino export industry would experience a decline in profit. In order to address this, the US Congress passed the Tydings-Kocalkowski Act of 1940 which removed increased taxes on selected Philippine products such as coconut oil and cigars. These Philippine exports were allowed to enter the US duty-free, but the amount of exports were to be reduced after a few years. The law also enacted measures to improve Philippine industry, and enable it to compete in international trade and be less dependent on trade with the US.

The establishment of the Commonwealth happened at a time of uncertainty in world affairs. During the 1930s, fascist regimes emerged in Germany and Italy, while Japan was dominated by militarist officials. Over the next few years, the Japanese Empire embarked on a military conquest which started with its occupation of China in 1937. Japan's actions alarmed the United States, and it sought to curb Japan's military aggression through diplomacy and trade sanctions. Despite these, Japan still continued with its expansion and invaded French Indo-China in 1940. The Philippines took note of these developments and made preparations for possible conflict. In 1941, Filipino military forces were incorporated into the US Army and the USAFFE (United States Army Forces in the Far East) was established. But despite these, the Philippines was still unprepared for the Japanese attack which took place on December 8, 1941. On January 2, 1942, Japanese forces entered Manila and the USAFFE troops were forced to retreat to Bataan and Corregidor.

Quezon and a select group of officials were moved to the United States and a government-in-exile was established there. The extraordinary circumstances during that time prompted the US to indefinitely extend the term of Quezon as President of the Commonwealth. Meanwhile, Quezon selected a group of Filipino politicians to stay behind in the Philippines and negotiate with the Japanese invaders. In April 9, 1942, Bataan surrendered to the Japanese, and Corregidor fell a month later. The collapse of the USAFFE ended all resistance to Japanese occupation in the Philippines.

The Third Philippine Republic

Philippine independence was finally realized when the United States officially proclaimed it on July 4, 1946. A new, republican, and democratic government, the Third Republic of the Philippines was inaugurated with Manuel Roxas as President. The government followed the model established by the 1935 Constitution. The President, as chief executive, served a term of four years and could not serve for more than two consecutive terms. The legislative branch consisted of the Philippine Congress with a Senate and a House of Representatives. The Senate was composed of 24 senators who shall serve for six years. Meanwhile, the House of Representatives was composed of not more than 120 members from each province or district in the country, and shall serve for four years. The Supreme Court was composed of the Chief Justice and 10 Associate Justices.

Despite the inauguration of a sovereign Philippine republic, the reality was that full independence for the Philippines came with a number of limitations. The Philippines was primarily economically dependent on the United States. This fact was underscored by the approval of the Bell Trade Act by the Philippine Congress with its provision on the parity rights, which was a violation of Philippine economic sovereignty. In 1947, the Philippine constitution was amended to accommodate parity rights for Americans. It was only with the passing of the Bell Trade Act that the United States approved the Tydings Rehabilitation Act, which provided funds for the rehabilitation of the Philippines. Additionally, the American military remained in various military installations and bases in the country. The 1947 Military Bases Agreement allowed the Americans to maintain military bases in the country, house American troops in them, and embark on military missions from these bases.

The political relationship between the United States and the Philippines was influenced by **neocolonialism**. This refers to the practice of a powerful state using economic, political, and cultural influence to control a developing country. The United States was able to influence political events and developments in the Philippines even though the latter was already an independent and sovereign country. One means by which the US implemented neocolonialism in the Philippines was by ensuring that the Filipino political elite remained in power as they shared almost the same interests and views as the United States. The political elite became an oligarchy and almost all power and authority remained in the hands of the influential and the privileged. The programs, policies, and efforts of the subsequent administrations in the Philippine government were often influenced by neocolonialism and the reality of Philippine dependence on the US.

Post-Independence Administrations

The administration of Manuel Roxas saw several developments that indicated the beginning of neocolonialism in the Philippines. It was under his administration that the Bell Trade Act

was passed and the 1935 Constitution amended, which gave the Americans parity rights and access to Philippine resources and industries. Meanwhile, the Military Bases Agreement also gave the Americans access to military bases throughout the country and allowed them sovereignty within the territory of these bases. One of the greatest challenges to the Roxas government was the spread of socialism and the growth of socialist and communist groups that supported the cause of workers and farmers.

Elpidio Quirino, who succeeded Manuel Roxas in 1948, sought to restore peace and order by negotiating with the Huk rebels. He also initiated a campaign to address government corruption and restore public trust in the administration. In 1951, the Philippines and the United States entered into a mutual defense treaty which was considered a response to the global threat of communism. The treaty imposed certain obligations on the Philippines such as assisting the US in its military operations, while the US promised its support for the Philippines should it be attacked by a foreign military force. Meanwhile, Quirino's anti-corruption drive was hampered by poor implementation. The President himself was accused of tolerating corrupt practices within his own Cabinet. One significant achievement of Quirino's administration was the implementation of foreign exchange control to address problems in the country's finances. Due to the implementation of the Bell Trade Act, Philippine markets became saturated with cheap imported products. This resulted in the Philippines almost exhausting its dollar reserves to pay for imports. Foreign exchange control was implemented to control the spending of dollars and prevent an imbalance in the country's finances. Likewise, import controls were also imposed.

Ramon Magsaysay's administration focused on solving the country's social problems. Magsaysay had an image of a "people's president" and advocated a platform upholding social welfare. The president was also a staunch ally of the United States and a vocal opponent of communism. It was during his term that the Huk rebellion was brought to an end with the surrender of Huk leader Luis Taruc and the arrest of several high-ranking Huks and communists. The Philippine government received considerable aid from the United States in ending the Huk rebellion. In 1955, the Philippines and the US renegotiated the terms of free trade through the Laurel-Langley Agreement. The new agreement provided for greater economic freedom for the Philippines while maintaining close trade relations with the US. The Philippines also became a firm partner of the US in combating the spread of communism throughout Asia through the Southeast Asia Treaty Organization (SEATO).

Magsaysay's untimely death in a plane crash in 1957 elevated his Vice President, Carlos P. Garcia into the presidency. His administration pursued nationalist policies. Foremost of these was the "Filipino First" Policy which aimed at fostering economic independence by extending privileges and assistance to Filipino entrepreneurs. The government also supported local industries and encouraged local production. Other initiatives included the revival of Philippine cultural arts, and the institution of austerity measures in government to curb corruption.

Diosdado Macapagal succeeded Garcia in 1961 and his administration tackled the issue of economic development by decentralizing economic controls. This resulted in the revocation of measures such as foreign exchange control and import controls. The government also focused on the plight of farmers. In 1963, Macapagal signed into law the Land Reform Code which abolished the tenancy system and established a leasehold system. One notable action of the government was the recognition of June 12 as the official Independence Day of the Philippines in honor of the 1898 Declaration of Independence. Another significant achievement in foreign relations was the establishment of the MAPHILINDO, a confederation of three countries – Malaysia, Philippines, and Indonesia. It was intended to foster closer economic, social, and cultural ties between the three countries. However, this union ended because of a diplomatic row between the Philippines and Malaysia over the territory of Sabah. The Macapagal administration, meanwhile, was criticized for being submissive to the interests of the United States. Corruption remained a problem in the government as evidenced by the Stonehill Scandal in 1962, where the arrest of an American businessman, Harry Stonehill, uncovered evidence of corruption and bribery which involved numerous government officials.

Throughout these administrations, the Philippines continually faced the challenges of social and economic inequality, government corruption, and the continuing insurgency led by communist groups. Economic development also proved difficult as the Philippine economy was closely tied to the United States, and American interests often influenced economic policies in the country. The political influence exerted by the Americans on the Philippine government also made it difficult for officials to advocate nationalist policies since these were often against the interests of the US.

The Fourth Republic of the Philippines

The Marcos Administration

Ferdinand Marcos was elected President in 1965 and his administration faced a nation in crisis. Many of the problems of the previous administrations, such as government corruption, social inequality, and the resurgence of communist rebellion in some provinces, were considered the gravest threats to the government. To address these, the Marcos administration outlined several policies which emphasized economic self-sufficiency, improved agricultural production and land reform, and encouraged community development.

Among the initial achievements of the government was the establishment of the Association of South East Asian Nations (ASEAN), which became a forum for closer ties among Southeast Asian countries. The Philippines also sent Filipino soldiers to South Vietnam to assist in infrastructure projects. This was done in support of the American offensive against communists in Vietnam.

Marcos was reelected to a second term in 1969, and was the first incumbent president to win a reelection. At that time, the threat of communist rebellion had increased with the founding of the New People's Army (NPA) in 1969. The revival of the Communist Party of the Philippines and the rise of student activism in the late 1960s were also considered threats to government stability and security. In an effort to reform the government, Marcos called a Constitutional Convention in 1970 to amend the 1935 Constitution. The convention began its work in 1971 but it was interrupted when Martial Law was declared in 1972.

The Martial Law Period and the 1973 Constitution

The 1970s brought more challenges to the Marcos administration. The country experienced economic troubles, increased crime and violence, and growing government opposition from various sectors. During the early months of 1970, several protests against the government were staged by student activists, workers, and farmers. These protests called attention to the lack of government action on social problems, government corruption, and growing economic uncertainty. The First Quarter Storm, as these series of protests were known, were marked by violent clashes between protesters and the police. Marcos, meanwhile, saw these protests as signs of a brewing communist uprising that would topple the government.

A series of events in Manila, which included the Plaza Miranda bombing and the supposed attack on Defense Minister Juan Ponce Enrile (who later confessed that the ambush was staged), was blamed on communist elements. In response, Marcos placed the country under Martial Law in September 21, 1972. He explained that this action was necessary in order to "save the republic" and implement reforms in government and society. The declaration of Martial Law was followed by the arrest and detention of many known political opponents of Marcos, a ban on demonstrations and rallies, a takeover of all media outlets, and the seizure of several businesses. The Philippine Congress was also closed. Critics accused the government of using martial law as a means to establish a dictatorship.

With the declaration of martial law, Marcos took on unprecedented powers as he appropriated the power of legislation by issuing decrees aimed at improving the condition of the country. Among his most important decrees were Presidential Decree 1 (PD 1), which reorganized the provinces into 11 regions as part of an Integrated Reorganization Plan; and PD 2, which declared the entire Philippines as a land reform area. Marcos also tasked the 1970 Constitutional Convention to create a new government that would enable him to implement his intended reforms in Philippine government and society. In 1973, the new constitution was ratified by a plebiscite. The 1973 Constitution granted the President authoritarian powers, and a parliamentary system of government was introduced, where the executive and legislative branches were merged. The congressional system was transformed into a unicameral body called the Batasang Pambansa. The 1973 plebiscite also asked the citizens to decide regarding

the continuation of Martial Law. The results of the plebiscite showed that 90% of the citizens approved of continuing Martial Law.

The new government set in place the establishment of the Marcos dictatorship and his authoritarian rule over the Philippines. Marcos used his powers to set into motion significant social reforms based on his concept of the “New Society” (Bagong Lipunan). He endeavored to bring about a cultural and moral transformation of Filipino society. Marcos considered his dictatorship as an effective instrument to bring about reforms since governance would be streamlined under his authority and necessary laws could be passed and implemented without delay. Important elements in the New Society were agricultural development and infrastructure, and the government implemented several programs to address issues related to these matters.

However, the lofty intentions of the Marcos government were belied by the rampant corruption and abuse that occurred during the Martial Law period. Marcos was known to have extended favors to his close friends and associates. These “cronies” were often the first to benefit from government contracts and projects. Bribery, corruption, and misuse of funds were rampant in government offices. Marcos and his family were even accused of amassing wealth by channeling government funds into overseas bank accounts. The rampant corruption in government meant that the intended projects for economic development were not effectively implemented, resulting in economic difficulties for the Filipino people. Another negative aspect of the dictatorship was the rampant abuse of power committed by the police and military. Martial law gave them great powers, but these went unchecked resulting to several cases of torture, enforced disappearances, and summary executions. Political dissidents were also targeted, with some subjected to harassment, arrest, torture, and murder. During the 1970s, the human rights situation in the Philippines sparked concern in the international community. Amnesty International estimates that during the Martial Law period, 70,000 people were arrested, 34,000 were tortured, and more than 3,000 were killed.

The difficult economic conditions and the abuse of government power fueled opposition against the Philippine government.

The End of Martial Law and the Restoration of Democracy

In 1981, Marcos declared the end of martial law. Authoritarian rule, however, still remained and the government retained many of its powers. That year also saw the first elections in the country since the declaration of martial law in 1972. The elections were considered fraudulent by members of the political opposition and they chose not to participate. Marcos won the elections easily and was sworn in as the first President of the Fourth Republic of the Philippines, with Cesar Virata as Prime Minister. Soon after, rumors of Marcos having fallen ill revived the political opposition. This prompted Senator Benigno “Ninoy” Aquino Jr., Marcos’s staunchest political opponent, to return to the Philippines in 1983 after several years of living

in exile in the United States. Senator Aquino was shot upon disembarking his plane and his death revived widespread opposition to the Marcos government. The worsening social and economic conditions, and the widespread dissatisfaction among citizens forced Marcos to call for snap elections in 1986. Widespread electoral fraud in the elections led to demonstrations and calls for his ouster. The discovery of an attempted *coup d'état* against Marcos led to the 1986 EDSA Revolution where citizens peacefully assembled in defiance of the government and demanded for the dictatorship to be replaced by a democratic government. Marcos eventually left Malacañang Palace, and he and his family moved to the United States. A democratic government was restored under the leadership of Corazon Aquino, the widow of Ninoy Aquino. A new constitution was drafted in 1987 which gave way to the establishment of the Fifth Republic of the Philippines.

RECALL

- American colonialism went hand-in-hand with preparing Filipinos for self-governance. While the Philippines was under US administration, Filipinos were gradually provided opportunities to participate in governance. In 1907, the Philippine Assembly was established which enabled Filipino politicians to be elected into government and serve in the Assembly. Political parties were also organized and these became the means by which the Filipino elite was able to participate in politics. The local government was also reorganized and this allowed former leaders in the revolutionary Philippine Republic to become governors and mayors. Among the notable Filipino personalities to emerge during this period were Manuel Quezon and Sergio Osmeña, Sr.
- The passage of the Jones Law in 1916 gave more opportunities for Filipinos to participate in government, and also established a timetable for eventual Philippine independence. The Philippine legislature was reorganized, and composed of elected or appointed representatives from all over the country. Executive power was still exercised by an American governor-general, but the cabinet was now composed primarily of Filipino officials. The Filipinization policy of Gov. General Harrison further contributed to the increased participation of Filipinos in government.
- Since the passage of the Jones Law, Filipinos had sent several independence missions to campaign for immediate independence from the United States. In 1931, the Os-Rox Independence Mission successfully lobbied at the US Congress for an independence law, the Hare-Hawes-Cutting Act. However, Manuel Quezon intervened and secured another law, the Tydings-McDuffie Act, which became the final basis for the establishment of the Philippine Commonwealth. The Commonwealth government was structured to prepare the Philippines for independence within a decade.
- The Philippine Commonwealth was structured as a presidential system with a unicameral legislature. The President of the Commonwealth served a single term of six years and could not be reelected. Later amendments to the 1935 Constitution established a bicameral legislature with a Senate and a House of Representatives, and changed the term of office of the President to four years with a maximum of two terms. The constitution provided for continuing relations between the US and the Philippines. The United States exerted considerable influence in governance, especially in foreign policy and military affairs. Additionally, an American High Commissioner was appointed to act as an observer on Philippine affairs.
- The Philippine Commonwealth, under the leadership of President Manuel Quezon, enacted various measures to foster the country's development. He tackled the issue

of nationhood by addressing the need for a national language. Quezon also focused on national defense and through the National Defense Act, established a reservist citizen army. Quezon had great power and influence over Philippine politics, and some noted that he was ruling the Philippines as a virtual dictator. Despite this, the country still faced some significant challenges such as the issue of free trade with the US and the growing power of Japan in Asia.

- The relationship between the Philippines and the US from 1946 onwards was influenced by neocolonialism. This concept refers to the political control exerted by powerful nations over less powerful nations through economic and cultural means. Despite being independent, the Philippine Republic was still subject to some restrictions. The Philippine economy remained dependent on trade with the US, and the Americans still maintained a military presence in the country. The US exerted significant control over political events in the Philippines, and the Americans often influenced Philippine politics to meet their vested interests. The presidents of the Third Republic often dealt with the problems of the country while considering the neocolonial interests of the United States.
- The Martial Law Period ushered in significant changes in Philippine politics and governance. An authoritarian regime under President Marcos was established, and the government was reorganized to accommodate a dictatorship. The 1973 Constitution instituted a parliamentary government with a strong executive. The Marcos regime advocated a program of cultural and social reform but the efforts to achieve these goals were overshadowed by rampant corruption and human rights violations. In 1986, a popular revolution toppled the Marcos dictatorship and reestablished a democratic government. The restoration of Philippine democracy was made official with the passing of the 1987 Philippine Constitution and the establishment of the Fifth Republic of the Philippines.

EXAMINE

A. Identify the following.

- _____ 1. This act became the legal basis of the political changes the American colonizers implemented in the Philippines.
- _____ 2. This political party advocated the granting of total independence of the Philippines from the American colonizers.
- _____ 3. The efforts of this mission resulted in the enactment of the Hare-Hawes Cutting Act which provided for the creation of a transition government which would prepare the Philippines for independence.
- _____ 4. This organization attempted to recruit Filipinos into the Japanese government.
- _____ 5. This is the practice of a powerful state using economic, political, and cultural influence to control a developing country.
- _____ 6. Through the granting of these rights, Americans were allowed to exercise control over the natural resources of the Philippines.
- _____ 7. It was during his term that Luis Taruc and other Huk officials and communists surrendered to the Philippine government.
- _____ 8. This confederation among the Philippines, Malaysia, and Indonesia was established during the administration of former President Diosdado Macapagal.
- _____ 9. His administration supported local industries and encouraged the manufacturing of local products.
- _____ 10. This series of protests in 1970 was seen by former President Ferdinand Marcos as a threat against his administration.

B. Write T if the statement is true; write F if the statement is false.

- _____ 1. The Second Philippine Commission initially had legislative and executive powers in the Philippines.
- _____ 2. Filipinos began to gain considerable power in the national government during the American period; however, they were still not allowed to head local government units.

- _____ 3. The Nacionalista Party campaigned for the inclusion of the Philippines as a regular state under the US government.
- _____ 4. Sergio Osmeña objected to the provision of a ten-year preparatory period before total Philippine independence is granted.
- _____ 5. The 1935 Constitution provided for continuing relations between the Philippine Commonwealth and the US government
- _____ 6. Quezon was able to amend the 1935 Constitution in order to prohibit the reelection of a currently-serving president.
- _____ 7. The Philippine Executive Commission was only allowed to enact executive orders and promulgate pre-existing laws.
- _____ 8. Upon the reestablishment of the Commonwealth government, a number of former guerillas during the Japanese occupation organized political groups that were influenced by socialism.
- _____ 9. It was during the administration of Elpidio Quirino that the Bell Trade Act was passed into a law.
- _____ 10. Human rights violations and abuse of power were rampant during the Martial Law period.

C. Answer the following questions.

1. What developments enabled Filipinos to participate in governance during the American occupation?

2. What challenges did the Philippine Commonwealth address?

3. How has the United States maintained its political and economic ties with the Philippines upon its independence in 1946?

4. How did the Presidents during the Third Philippine Republic address neocolonialism and other challenges relating to governance?

5. How did the Marcos dictatorship affect politics and governance in the Philippines?

ANALYZE

Compare the various governments established in the Philippines since the American colonial period. Fill out the table with the required information.

Government	Establishment	Legitimacy	Sovereignty	Ideology
American Colonial Government				
Commonwealth Government				
Japanese-sponsored Government				

Third Philippine Republic (1946)				
Fourth Philippine Republic (1973)				

EMPOWER

- A. Research on one of the following historical events or issues in the Philippines. Describe how these contributed to the political developments that shaped Philippine politics and governance.**
- 1. Philippine-American War**
 - 2. Japanese Occupation of the Philippines**
 - 3. Agrarian Reform**
 - 4. Martial Law Period**
 - 5. Neocolonialism**
- B. Research on the biographies and contributions of Philippine presidents from Emilio Aguinaldo to the current administration. Prepare an exhibit that will present the background and achievements of each president. Highlight their contributions to Philippine political history as well as the challenges they faced during their respective terms.**

AN INTRODUCTION TO THE 1987 CONSTITUTION

ENGAGE

The EDSA People Power Revolution in February 1986 toppled a 20-year dictatorship and restored democracy in the Philippines. Freedoms that were then curtailed under the Marcos dictatorship were restored. The 1986 revolution also ushered in a new constitution that revoked the authoritarian powers of the government and oriented the republic towards democracy. This new Constitution, promulgated in 1987, still serves as the official basis of governance to the present day.

At the end of the lesson, students are expected to answer the following questions:

1. How did historical events influence the development of the Philippine Constitution?
2. How does the constitution define the Filipino state?
3. How does the Constitution guarantee democracy and the protection of the Filipino welfare?
4. What measures are prescribed in the Constitution to guarantee a check on the powers of government and balance among the branches of government?

DISCUSS

The Philippine Constitutions throughout History

The Philippine Constitution has undergone several significant changes that were driven by the political, social, and economic changes which the country faced throughout history. The Biak-na-Bato constitution (1897) was created during the latter part of the revolutionary movement, with the ultimate aim of complete independence from Spanish colonizers. Then, the Malolos Constitution (1898) was promulgated to assert the independence of the First Philippine Republic as proclaimed by Emilio Aguinaldo. Unfortunately, this republic never obtained legitimacy from other states around the world, and the Philippines was once again colonized, this time by the Americans. Nonetheless, the country was promised a transition

from a colony to a sovereign republic; this was made possible through the 1935 Constitution, which enabled the establishment of the Philippine Commonwealth. However, the Japanese invasion caused a complete change in the Philippine government. This brought about the creation of the 1943 Constitution and the establishment of the Second Republic. The return of the Commonwealth Government in 1945 signaled the restoration of the 1935 Constitution as the basis of governance in the state. The independence of the Philippines in 1946 gave rise to the Third Philippine Republic. Only with the rule of Ferdinand Marcos would the constitution be once again replaced in 1973, in order to facilitate an authoritarian dictatorship.

A Background on the 1987 Constitution

The dictatorial rule of Marcos ended in 1986, in the wake of the EDSA People Power Revolution. This event restored democracy in the Philippines. After the ouster of the Marcos dictatorship, a revolutionary government was organized under the leadership of Corazon Aquino. This government promulgated a Freedom Constitution which contained provisions establishing a transitional government and instituted initial changes which restored democracy to the Philippines. The administration also declared the formation of a Constitutional Commission to create a new constitution. This constitution was ratified on February 2, 1987, and still serves as the basis of governance in the country up to the present.

The 1987 Constitution contains the following articles:

ARTICLE I	National Territory
ARTICLE II	Declaration of Principles and State Policies
ARTICLE III	Bill of Rights
ARTICLE IV	Citizenship
ARTICLE V	Suffrage
ARTICLE VI	Legislative Department
ARTICLE VII	Executive Department
ARTICLE VIII	Judicial Department
ARTICLE IX	Constitutional Commissions
ARTICLE X	Local Government
ARTICLE XI	Accountability of Public Officers

ARTICLE XII	National Economy and Patrimony
ARTICLE XIII	Social Justice and Human Rights
ARTICLE XIV	Education, Science and Technology, Arts, Culture and Sports
ARTICLE XV	The Family
ARTICLE XVI	General Provisions
ARTICLE XVII	Amendments or Revisions
ARTICLE XVIII	Transitory Provisions

These articles tackle various aspects of governance and nationhood. Some of the aspects of the constitution which are significant to politics and governance include citizenship and the national territory; upholding democracy, civilian authority, and the general welfare; and the branches of government.

National Territory and Citizenship

National territory and citizenship are two important aspects of nationhood and governance. Article I on the national territory defines the geographical limits of sovereignty over the Philippine state. While the extent of the Philippine territory is not numerically measured, it is stated to encompass all geographical forms, be it in land, air, or water.

Meanwhile, citizenship refers to the status of any person under the jurisdiction of a state. Article II provides the bases for the recognition of Filipino citizens. Based on the constitution, there are two kinds of Filipino citizens: natural-born Filipinos and naturalized Filipinos. Natural-born Filipinos are defined as those having Filipino parents or those born in Philippine territory. On the other hand, naturalized citizens do not bear Filipino citizenship at birth. Instead, they obtain Filipino citizenship through a legal process referred to as naturalization. Filipinos may also lose or reacquire their citizenship through legal means.

Aspects of Philippine Democracy in the Constitution

The Philippine state is defined in the 1987 Constitution as both democratic and republican. Based on this, it can be said that the Philippines is a republican democracy, where citizens

choose officials who shall uphold their interests in the government. This characteristic of Philippine democracy has two aspects, which are discussed in various articles of the Constitution.

The first of these aspects is the vital role of the Filipino citizens in state affairs. Article II, for example, points out that the sovereignty over the state rests in the Filipino people. It also mentioned that “civilian authority is... supreme over the military.” The sovereignty of the Filipino people is further tackled in Article V, which focuses on suffrage, or the right to vote for the officials of the government. Representation of the public in the government is highlighted particularly in Article VI, where it is stated that the members of the legislature should represent the various provinces and municipalities of the country, as well as the different sectors of society. Lastly, Article XI stresses that all government officials have a duty to be accountable to the public. This means that the people should be served with utmost responsibility, integrity, loyalty, and efficiency. Government leaders are expected to exercise patriotism and justice in their deeds, and observe simplicity in their daily lives. Failure to show accountability in public service may lead to sanctions, such as the impeachment of a government official.

The second important aspect of democracy discussed in the Constitution is the duty of the government to uphold the general welfare of the Filipino people at all times. Article III ensures this by instituting the civil liberties or rights entitled to a Filipino. These include the right to due process, freedom of speech and expression, and access to public information. Articles XIII, Article XIV, and Article XV echo the importance of upholding Filipino welfare as they state provisions on significant social matters, including labor; health; equal opportunities for women; the development of Filipino families; and access to quality education at all levels. One significant feature of the Constitution is the safeguard set in place to prevent the return of a dictatorship in the country. The President may declare martial law in times of rebellion or foreign invasion. However, this declaration is subject to the review and approval of Congress and may be challenged in the courts. The state of martial law does not suspend the Bill of Rights nor does it cause the suspension of the functions of the other branches of government. In addition, the 1987 constitution assures that the President cannot suspend the writ of *habeas corpus* for an indefinite period. The writ of *habeas corpus* refers to the right of the accused against illegal arrest or detention. This means that a citizen accused of a crime cannot be held in captivity for an extended period of time, and must be brought before the court so that the charges against him or her can be substantiated. The writ of *habeas corpus*, however, can be suspended in certain occasions such as rebellion or invasion of the state, where public safety might be threatened.

Branches of Government

The constitution assigns the powers of the executive branch to the President of the Republic. The **President** is elected nationally, and shall serve for a six-year term without reelection. He or she is tasked with appointing the members of the Cabinet and the different departments.

The President also serves as the Commander-in-Chief of the Armed Forces of the Philippines, and has the option to declare martial law to address the threat of rebellion or invasion. Meanwhile, the **Vice President** is elected together with the President. Similar to the President, the Vice President is chosen through a national election, and serves a six-year term without reelection. He or she directly replaces the President in case of death, permanent disability, removal from office, or resignation of the latter. The Vice President may also be given a separate position in the Cabinet.

The Congress of the Philippines is the legislative branch of the government. It is responsible for the creation of laws to be enacted and followed throughout the state. The Congress is bicameral in nature, which means that it is divided into two separate assemblies called the upper and lower houses. The upper house of Congress is the **Philippine Senate**, composed of 24 senators elected nationally. Each senator serves a six-year term and may be reelected up to a second term of office. The lower house, on the other hand, is the **House of Representatives**, composed of 250 members. The majority of these members are district representatives who are elected by their respective constituents in 234 legislative districts throughout the country. The remaining seats in the House of Representatives are taken by party-list representatives, who come from various sectors of society. These include the youth, laborers, farmers, and teachers, among others. Unlike the district representatives, party-list representatives are elected nationally. All of the members of the House of Representatives serve a three-year term and may be reelected up to a third term of office.

The judicial branch of the government acts as the ultimate arbiter for questions of political, legal, or constitutional nature, which cannot be resolved by the executive and legislative branches of the government. The judiciary is made up of the **Supreme Court** and other lower courts in the country. The Supreme Court is comprised of the Chief Justice and 14 other Associate Justices. The Chief Justice and the Associate Justices are not elected by the Filipino people; instead, they are appointed by the President based on the recommended list of nominees presented by the Judicial and Bar Council. These nominees are expected to have practiced law or served as judges in a lower court for at least fifteen years. The terms of the Chief Justice and Associate Justices of the Supreme Court end upon reaching the age of 70, or when they are removed from office through impeachment.

Separation of Powers; Checks and Balances

Separation of powers refers to the principle that divides government powers into three distinct, separate branches of government. This was intended to prevent one branch of government from gaining too much power and ensure that its actions do not go beyond the scope defined by the constitution. **Checks and balances** is a related principle which states that the branches of government are able to impose limits on each other's powers and ensure that one branch acts with the knowledge and consent of the other branches. The 1987 Constitution contains provisions that apply these principles and ensure a balance of power and the sharing of responsibilities among the branches of government.

How the EXECUTIVE BRANCH checks and balances:	
the Legislative Branch	the Judicial Branch
<ul style="list-style-type: none"> • approves legislation by signing a bill into law • exercises veto power over a bill or parts of a bill 	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> • reviews the credentials of nominees and appoints the Justices of the Supreme Court • grants pardons and amnesties

The President has the power to approve the laws and orders legislated by Congress. If the President does not approve of a certain piece of legislation, he or she may veto it and call for a review by Congress. As for the judiciary, the President also appoints the members of the Supreme Court, with the approval of Congress. The President also has the power to grant pardons and amnesties, with consent by Congress.

How the LEGISLATIVE BRANCH checks and balances:	
the Executive Branch	the Judicial Branch
<ul style="list-style-type: none"> • reverses the President's veto • grants consent or authorization to the President regarding specific matters • reviews and approves Presidential appointments to the Cabinet, Constitutional Commissions, government offices, and other bodies • may invalidate the declaration of martial law • canvasses votes as National Board of Canvassers • initiates and conducts impeachment proceedings against the President and Vice President 	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> • determines court jurisdictions • sets the qualifications of members of the lower courts • initiates and conducts impeachment proceedings against the members of the Supreme Court

Although the President has the power to approve or veto legislations by Congress, the latter may still invalidate a veto by a vote of 2/3 of both houses of Congress. The Legislative Branch also initiates the impeachment process, as well as the canvassing of votes for the President and Vice President positions during national elections. Aside from this, the President must seek the consent of the legislative branch on certain matters, such as the approval of international agreements and treaties; the granting of pardons and amnesties; and the appointment of members of both the Cabinet and the Judicial and Bar Council. Congress also determines the jurisdictions of courts in the country, as well as the qualifications of members of the lower courts.

How the JUDICIAL BRANCH checks and balances:	
the Executive Branch	the Legislative Branch
<ul style="list-style-type: none"> • decides on the constitutionality of executive orders, proclamations, executive actions 	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> • decides on the constitutionality of laws passed • constitutes part of the Electoral Tribunals that decide on electoral protests

The Judicial Branch has the authority to interpret or assess laws passed by the Congress and approved by the President. As such, the Supreme Court may deem a certain law as unconstitutional. The judiciary also decides on the legality of the actions of the President, as well as his or her executive proclamations and orders. In addition, the Justices of the Supreme Court are members of the electoral tribunals which look into protests on the Presidential, Vice Presidential, and Congress elections. The Court also renders decisions on the constitutionality of any decision or action of an official in the executive branch.

Constitutional Commissions

Article IX of the 1987 Constitution provides for the creation of the Constitutional Commissions, namely, the Civil Service Commission (CSC), the Commission on Elections (COMELEC), and the Commission on Audit (COA). These commissions play an important role in ensuring a system of checks and balances in the government because they take charge of vital functions and processes such as hiring government personnel, administering elections, and reviewing the use of public funds. Article XIII of the Constitution established another independent commission, the Commission on Human Rights, which investigates and addresses cases of human rights abuses. These commissions are independent from the other branches of the government and are granted fiscal autonomy. This means that their budgets may not be reduced, and that they are free to spend them for their respective needs, subject to the usual checks such as auditing.

The **Civil Service Commission (CSC)** is the central personnel agency of the government and is tasked with hiring the employees of the various government offices. The Commission also defines the responsibilities of government employees and ensures their accountability. The Commission administers the Civil Service Examination, which is a test taken by those who wish to work for the government. The Commission is headed by a Chairman and two Commissioners, who are appointed by the President.

The **Commission on Elections (COMELEC)** is in charge of facilitating and supervising the conduct of elections in the country. It makes sure that elections in the country are held in a free, orderly, honest, peaceful, and credible manner. The COMELEC also administers plebiscites,

initiatives, referenda, and recall elections. The Commission is headed by a Chairman and six Commissioners who are appointed by the President.

The **Commission on Audit** (COA) is responsible for reviewing and settling accounts on the revenue and expenditures of the offices and agencies of the government. COA has the power to disallow irregular, unnecessary, excessive, extravagant or unconscionable expenses and uses of government funds and properties. It is also tasked with submitting an annual report detailing the financial status and operation of the government and its other offices. The COA is headed by a Chairman and two Commissioners who are appointed by the President.

The **Commission on Human Rights** is an independent commission empowered to investigate all forms of human rights violations involving civil and political rights. In particular, it looks into cases involving the rights of the accused and the underprivileged and provides legal aid to victims of human rights abuses. It monitors the government's compliance with international treaty obligations on human rights and recommends measures to promote human rights and provide compensation for victims. The CHR is composed of a Chairman and four Commissioners who are appointed by the President.

RECALL

- The Philippine Constitution has changed in various ways as a result of the events that took place in the country's history. The 1987 Constitution is the latest in these developments, and is the basis of governance of the country up to the present day.
- The 1987 Constitution defines the national territory of the state, as well as Filipino citizenship. These two aspects of nationhood and governance help established the limits of sovereignty over the state, as well as the people who are allowed to exercise it.
- The Philippine state is characterized in the Constitution as both democratic and republican. This means that governance in the country has two aspects: the vital role of the Filipino citizens in state affairs, and the duty of the government to take care of their welfare at all times.
- The branches of the government have also undergone changes throughout history. At present, as stated in the 1987 Constitution, the Philippine government is divided into three branches: the executive, legislative, and judicial branches. The relationship between these three branches is defined by the concepts of separation of powers and checks and balances.

- The constitution provides for the organization of constitutional commissions that perform vital tasks for the government. The Commission on Civil Service hires government personnel for the various government offices. The Commission on Elections administers elections in the country and ensures that they are free, orderly, honest, peaceful, and credible. The Commission on Audit reviews government accounts and is empowered to prevent unnecessary and improper spending of government funds. Finally, the Commission on Human Rights investigates cases of human rights violations and ensures that the government recognizes and respects the rights of all citizens.

EXAMINE

A. Identify the following.

- _____ 1. This constitution is the basis of governance in the country at present.
- _____ 2. This is the right of the accused or defendant against illegal arrest or detention.
- _____ 3. This official heads the executive branch of the government.
- _____ 4. This Article in the Constitution enumerates the rights of every Filipino citizen.
- _____ 5. The President may perform this action if he or she does not approve of a certain piece of legislation.
- _____ 6. This government branch functions as the ultimate arbiter for political, legal, or constitutional issues.
- _____ 7. This government branch is tasked with the creation of laws.
- _____ 8. This is the upper house of Congress.
- _____ 9. This is the lower house of Congress.
- _____ 10. This principle states that the branches of government can impose limits on each other's powers.

B. Write T if the statement is true; write F if the statement is false.

- _____ 1. Upon taking office as President, Corazon Aquino immediately organized a revolutionary government under her rule.
- _____ 2. The 1987 Constitution states that the Philippine territory encompasses all geographical forms, be it in land, air, or water.
- _____ 3. Filipinos who lose their citizenship cannot reacquire it.
- _____ 4. According to the 1987 Constitution, military authority is supreme over civilian authority.
- _____ 5. Article X of the 1987 Constitution emphasizes the importance of the accountability of government officials.
- _____ 6. The writ of *habeas corpus* cannot be suspended indefinitely by the government.
- _____ 7. Congress may invalidate a President's veto by a 2/3 vote of the entire body.
- _____ 8. The terms of the Justices of the Supreme Court are limited to six years.
- _____ 9. The President seeks consent from the Supreme Court in granting pardons and amnesties.
- _____ 10. The Vice President may be given a position in the Cabinet.

C. Answer the following questions.

- 1. How is the Philippine state defined in the constitution? How does this affect the relationship between the citizens and the government?

2. How does the constitution guarantee general welfare and the protection of individual rights and freedoms?

3. Choose one branch of government and discuss its role in governance. How is this branch empowered to uphold its responsibility?

4. What is the significance of the principle of separation of powers in a democracy?

5. Why is it important to ensure a system of checks and balances in our government?

ANALYZE

Read and analyze the Bill of Rights, and answer the questions that follow.

ARTICLE III: BILL OF RIGHTS

Section 1. No person shall be deprived of life, liberty, or property without due process of law, nor shall any person be denied the equal protection of the laws.

Section 2. The right of the people to be secure in their persons, houses, papers, and effects against unreasonable searches and seizures of whatever nature and for any purpose shall be inviolable, and no search warrant or warrant of arrest shall issue except upon probable cause to be determined personally by the judge after examination under oath or affirmation of the complainant and the witnesses he may produce, and particularly describing the place to be searched and the persons or things to be seized.

Section 3. (1) The privacy of communication and correspondence shall be inviolable except upon lawful order of the court, or when public safety or order requires otherwise, as prescribed by law.
(2) Any evidence obtained in violation of this or the preceding section shall be inadmissible for any purpose in any proceeding.

Section 4. No law shall be passed abridging the freedom of speech, of expression, or of the press, or the right of the people peaceably to assemble and petition the government for redress of grievances.

- Section 5.** No law shall be made respecting an establishment of religion, or prohibiting the free exercise thereof. The free exercise and enjoyment of religious profession and worship, without discrimination or preference, shall forever be allowed. No religious test shall be required for the exercise of civil or political rights.
- Section 6.** The liberty of abode and of changing the same within the limits prescribed by law shall not be impaired except upon lawful order of the court. Neither shall the right to travel be impaired except in the interest of national security, public safety, or public health, as may be provided by law.
- Section 7.** The right of the people to information on matters of public concern shall be recognized. Access to official records, and to documents and papers pertaining to official acts, transactions, or decisions, as well as to government research data used as basis for policy development, shall be afforded the citizen, subject to such limitations as may be provided by law.
- Section 8.** The right of the people, including those employed in the public and private sectors, to form unions, associations, or societies for purposes not contrary to law shall not be abridged.
- Section 9.** Private property shall not be taken for public use without just compensation.
- Section 10.** No law impairing the obligation of contracts shall be passed.
- Section 11.** Free access to the courts and quasi-judicial bodies and adequate legal assistance shall not be denied to any person by reason of poverty.
- Section 12.** (1) Any person under investigation for the commission of an offense shall have the right to be informed of his right to remain silent and to have competent and independent counsel preferably of his own choice. If the person cannot afford the services of counsel, he must be provided with one. These rights cannot be waived except in writing and in the presence of counsel.
- (2) No torture, force, violence, threat, intimidation, or any other means which vitiate the free will shall be used against him. Secret detention places, solitary, *incommunicado*, or other similar forms of detention are prohibited.
- (3) Any confession or admission obtained in violation of this or Section 17 hereof shall be inadmissible in evidence against him.
- (4) The law shall provide for penal and civil sanctions for violations of this section as well as compensation to the rehabilitation of victims of torture or similar practices, and their families.

Section 13. All persons, except those charged with offenses punishable by *reclusion perpetua* when evidence of guilt is strong, shall, before conviction, be bailable by sufficient sureties, or be released on recognizance as may be provided by law. The right to bail shall not be impaired even when the privilege of the writ of *habeas corpus* is suspended. Excessive bail shall not be required.

Section 14. (1) No person shall be held to answer for a criminal offense without due process of law.

(2) In all criminal prosecutions, the accused shall be presumed innocent until the contrary is proved, and shall enjoy the right to be heard by himself and counsel, to be informed of the nature and cause of the accusation against him, to have a speedy, impartial, and public trial, to meet the witnesses face to face, and to have compulsory process to secure the attendance of witnesses and the production of evidence in his behalf. However, after arraignment, trial may proceed notwithstanding the absence of the accused provided that he has been duly notified and his failure to appear is unjustifiable.

Section 15. The privilege of the writ of *habeas corpus* shall not be suspended except in cases of invasion or rebellion, when the public safety requires it.

Section 16. All persons shall have the right to a speedy disposition of their cases before all judicial, quasi-judicial, or administrative bodies.

Section 17. No person shall be compelled to be a witness against himself.

Section 18. (1) No person shall be detained solely by reason of his political beliefs and aspirations.

(2) No involuntary servitude in any form shall exist except as a punishment for a crime whereof the party shall have been duly convicted.

Section 19. (1) Excessive fines shall not be imposed, nor cruel, degrading or inhuman punishment inflicted. Neither shall death penalty be imposed, unless, for compelling reasons involving heinous crimes, the Congress hereafter provides for it. Any death penalty already imposed shall be reduced to *reclusion perpetua*.

(2) The employment of physical, psychological, or degrading punishment against any prisoner or detainee or the use of substandard or inadequate penal facilities under subhuman conditions shall be dealt with by law.

Section 20. No person shall be imprisoned for debt or non-payment of a poll tax.

Section 21. No person shall be twice put in jeopardy of punishment for the same offense. If an act is punished by a law and an ordinance, conviction or acquittal under either shall constitute a bar to another prosecution for the same act.

Section 22. No *ex post facto* law or bill of attainder shall be enacted.

Discussion Questions

1. Why is it important for the government to uphold human rights and freedoms?
2. Why is it important for a democratic state to have a Bill of Rights in its constitution?
3. Why does Article III contain provisions which are extensively detailed?
4. Why does the government give the accused several rights? Why should the accused be granted these protections?
5. Would you add a new provision to be Bill of Rights? What provision would this be and why would you add it?

EMPOWER

- A. Invite a lawyer or judge to your class to discuss the significance of the Constitution and legislation in daily life. Discuss with his/her how you as students can uphold the rule of law and respect for the law in your respective communities.**
- B. Conduct a research on the Commission on Human Rights (CHR). Find out what its functions and objectives are. Look into the limitations and challenges it has encountered in accomplishing its goals as well. Then, suggest ways that will improve how the CHR upholds its mandate.**
- C. Search for a news or feature story from the media regarding violations of the Constitution. Describe the circumstances surrounding the news and analyze the relevant constitutional provision that is involved. Discuss your work in class.**

A Closer Look at the

PHILIPPINE GOVERNMENT



LESSON

- 8 Legislation and the Rule of Law
- 9 The Executive Branch and Local Government
- 10 The Judicial Branch
- 11 Elections in the Philippines

Lesson 8

LEGISLATION AND THE RULE OF LAW

ENGAGE

It is often said that it is a must to follow the law, and that no one is above it. In fact, those who fail to abide by the rule of law are imprisoned or punished. Several instances of violations of the law, particularly crime, are often reported in the news. With this, one might ask: what are laws and why is it important to follow them? Laws are an important aspect of governance. They help regulate the rights enjoyed by any member of the state, be it a government official or a citizen. Laws also address the excesses committed in enjoying these rights. To further understand the significance of laws, it is important to be able to understand the nature of laws and lawmaking. It is also important to know more about the individuals behind the creation and implementation of laws, and the process through which laws are made.

At the end of the lesson, students are expected to answer the following questions:

1. What is the importance of laws and legislation in politics and governance?
2. What are the important roles of the legislature in upholding the rule of law?
3. How does the legislative process ensure the effectiveness of a proposed piece of legislation?
4. What issues or challenges limit the effectiveness of Congress in performing its duties?

DISCUSS

Lawmaking and the Rule of Law

Laws are sets of rules or pieces of legislation that are formulated by the government and are meant to be followed by all citizens of a state. A law is also referred to as a **statutory law** or **legislation**, and is made by a legislative body, such as congress or parliament. **Legislation** also refers to the act of making laws, and is one of the powers of government.

The importance of laws and legislation for a state is underscored by the **rule of law**. The rule of law is a principle centered on the belief that a state should be governed by laws and not by the arbitrary decisions of leaders or government officials. Laws embody the principles and ideals of the state; ensure that social and political order are maintained in the country; and enable the state to achieve its goals. Laws also set reasonable limits on the actions of any member of a state; any action, no matter how justifiable, moral, or benevolent it may be, has to

be within the bounds of the law. As such, laws regulate the actions of government agencies and set limits on freedoms of citizens to prevent the abuse and misuse of their powers and rights.

In the Philippines, the crafting of laws is primarily the responsibility of the Philippine Congress, which is the legislative branch of the government. However, Congress also works closely with the executive and judicial branches in the promulgation and evaluation of laws. Once laws are approved and promulgated, it is the task of the executive branch to enforce them. The executive branch also issues pronouncements which have the power of law as they are enforced by the various branches of government and followed by citizens. Meanwhile, the decisions of the Supreme Court also constitute a body of legal knowledge that influences the creation of laws. Citizens can also participate in legislation through an initiative and a referendum. An **initiative** allows the people to directly propose laws and even amendments to the Constitution. A **referendum**, meanwhile, is a means by which the people are able to vote to either approve or reject a piece of legislation.

The Nature of Philippine Laws

Modern Philippine laws are classified into various types. These are defined according to the specific political or social matters they deal with, or the particular group or system under their scope. The **Constitution** is the supreme law of the land, and it is the basis and foundation of all laws in the country. It is also an **organic law**, or a law that describes and organizes the government that will run the state. At present, the 1987 Constitution serves as the organic law of the Fifth Philippine Republic. **Republic Acts** are laws which create policies to carry out the principles stated in the constitution. These are crafted, passed by Congress, and approved by the President. These acts are enforced by the government and must be followed by all citizens throughout the country.

Various laws created by Congress may fall under one of the following general classifications. **Administrative law** refers to legislation specifically concerned with the activities or actions of government agencies and departments. **Civil service law** pertains to public service, particularly the employment, selection, and promotion of public workers. **Civil law** outlines the rights and duties of individuals, particularly concerning contracts and other agreements. **Criminal law** addresses crimes, and outlines criminal behaviors and their appropriate sanctions. **Labor law** addresses the relationship between employers and workers and outlines their rights, responsibilities, and privileges. **Commercial law** focuses on trade concerns, particularly the production, distribution, exchange, and pricing of goods and services. **Taxation law** identifies, determines, and regulates the type of taxes to be levied from a particular business transaction, trade, or activity.

At the local level, the power of legislation is wielded by the barangay, city, municipal, and provincial councils. These bodies create and enact **ordinances** that are applicable within their respective jurisdictions.

The President may also execute pronouncements that are not legislation but have the effect of law since they are also implemented by the government and followed by citizens. These include **executive orders**, **administrative orders**, and **proclamations**. **Executive orders** are rules based on the powers of the President as head of the executive branch of government. They address the organization of government offices and authorize departments to perform an action. **Administrative orders** are laws which are enacted to help the President improve his or her management of the government. These include the creation of bodies such as a task force or an executive committee, or the implementation of rules and regulations for a government agency. **Proclamations** are issuances that primarily set dates of national or local interest, such as holidays and commemorations. Proclamations also cover declarations of states of emergency as well as martial law. All of these executive pronouncements must be based on legislation and are subject to judicial review.

The judiciary, while not directly involved in the process of legislation, also exerts a significant influence in making laws. Certain decisions of the Supreme Court establish a precedent that influences the interpretation of laws in the country. The Supreme Court, in addition, is the final authority that determines whether a law is acceptable or constitutional.

Two important characteristics of laws are **validity** and **continuity**. The validity of laws is determined through a collaborative process involving all of the branches of government. Congress, for instance, ensures that new laws do not duplicate or contradict pre-existing laws. If they do, then legislators must act on repealing the law. In most cases, only part of the law is amended or repealed. The president reviews a piece of legislation prior to signing, and may exercise his or her veto power on the law or parts of it that may be deemed unacceptable. The judiciary can also review laws and determine whether they are constitutional or unconstitutional.

Meanwhile, continuity means that a law remains valid until it is either amended, repealed, or replaced by a new law. It is the duty of Congress to review existing laws, amend them to conform to current legal and political developments, and repeal or replace those that are considered obsolete. Laws that remain in effect up to the present are deemed fit for the needs of the Filipino people and are a source of authority for the state. One way through which the continuity of laws is ensured is through the *Official Gazette* which contains compilations of all the laws and constitutions promulgated in the Philippines since 1901.

The Philippine Congress

The Philippine Congress is the legislative branch of the government which has the power to create laws. It is a bicameral body composed of two houses: the Upper House or Senate, and the Lower House or House of Representatives. Both houses have specific responsibilities and their members are chosen based on distinct criteria.

The **Senate** is composed of 24 senators who are elected nationally. Each senator serves a six-year term of office, for a maximum of two consecutive terms. According to the Constitution, those who aim to obtain a position in the Senate are required to meet the following qualifications:

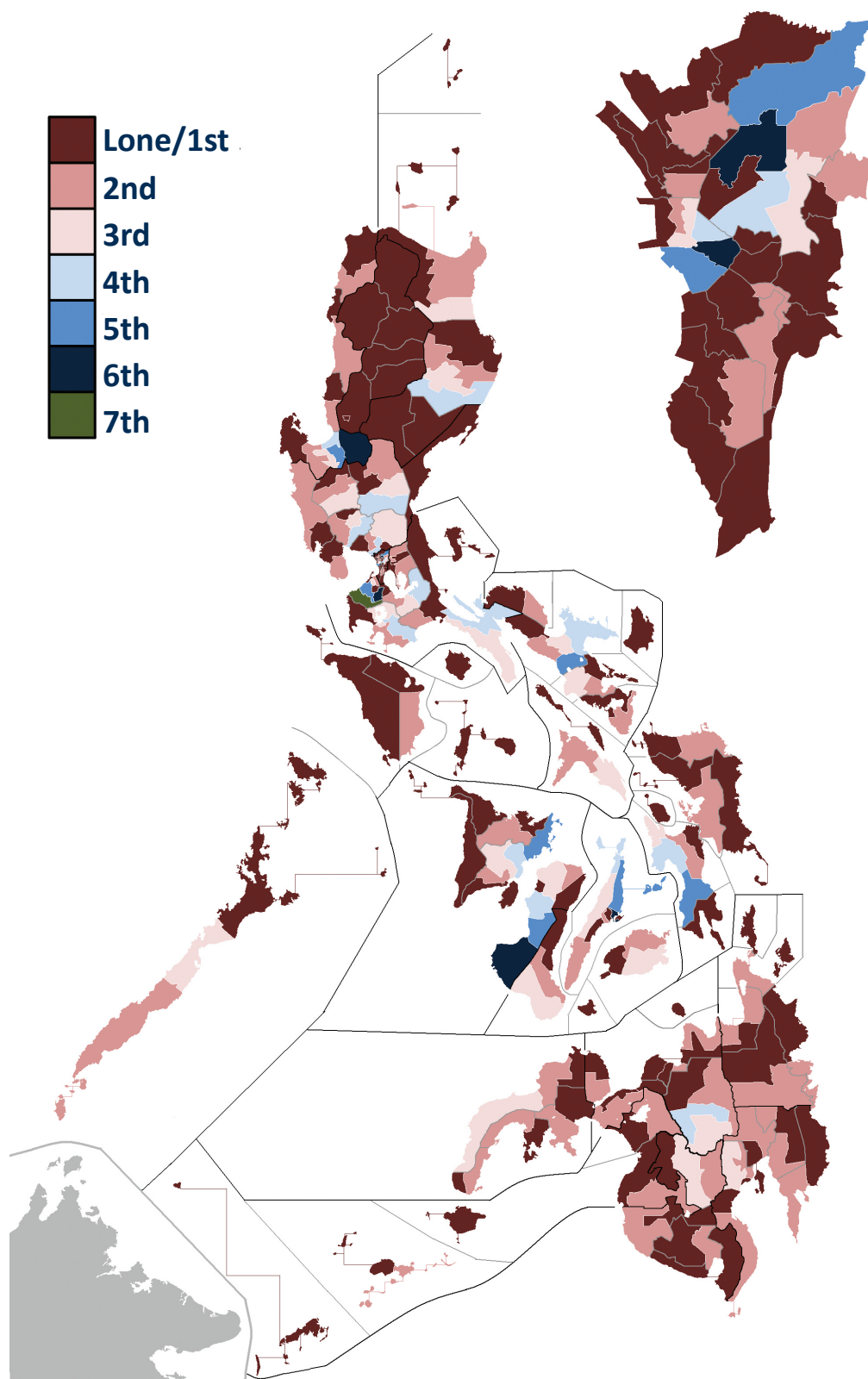
- 1) must be a natural-born citizen of the Philippines;
- 2) must be at least 35 years old on the day of the election;
- 3) must be literate;
- 4) must be a registered voter; and
- 5) must have lived in the Philippines for at least two years before the day of the election.

The senators elect among themselves the officers who will head the various offices of the body. The highest official of the Senate is the **Senate President** who leads the Senate sessions and ensures order in all proceedings. The Senate President is also considered the third highest official in the government after the President and the Vice-President. Senators also elect a **Senate President Pro Tempore**, who performs the functions of the Senate President in case of the latter's prolonged absence, incapacity, or removal from office. The members of the majority bloc, elect the **Majority Floor Leader** while the members of the minority political bloc elect the **Minority Floor Leader**. These two officials work together in endorsing, analyzing, and evaluating proposed pieces of legislations in the Senate.

The Lower House of Congress or the **House of Representatives** is composed of representatives who are colloquially referred to as “congressmen” and “congresswomen.” The members of the House of Representatives are given three-year terms, and may serve not more than three consecutive terms in office.

The Constitution states that the House of Representatives must be composed of 250 members. Each member is classified either as a **district representative** or **party-list representative**. They comprise the majority of the House of Representatives. These representatives are elected by constituents residing in their respective congressional districts. These districts are determined by law, based on the number of people residing in certain areas in the country. According to the Constitution, a province or a city with a population of at least 250,000 requires at least one representative. The map on the next page shows the congressional districts in the Philippines:

The Congressional Districts in the Philippines as of the 16th Congress (2015)



The party-list representatives, meanwhile, make up about 20 percent (20%) of the members of the House of Representatives. They do not represent a certain geopolitical area of the country; instead, they come from organizations corresponding to the various sectors of society, such as the youth, women, the labor sector, and indigenous communities, among others.

The Constitution states that an individual running for a position in the House of Representatives must be:

- 1) a natural-born Filipino;
- 2) at least 25 years old by the day of the elections; and
- 3) literate.

A district representative, meanwhile, is required specifically to meet two more qualifications. He or she:

- 1) must be a registered voter of the district in which he or she shall be elected; and
- 2) must have lived in the same district for at least a year before the day of the elections.

Like in the Senate, the members of the House of Representatives also elect their own set of officials, the highest of which is the **Speaker of the House**. The Speaker is the presiding officer during sessions and is the key decision-maker in the House. He or she is also the chief administrative officer of the House. Should the Speaker be absent, incapacitated, or removed from office, he or she shall be replaced by one of the **Deputy Speakers**. They are second-in-power after the Speaker. As such, the Deputy Speakers may give recommendations regarding the legislation process, or appoint House staff upon authorization by the Speaker. The next leadership positions in the House of Representatives are the Majority and Minority Leaders. The **Majority Leader** serves as the spokesperson of the majority party in the House and leads the discussions on the bills being passed. On the other hand, the Minority Leader acts as the spokesperson of the minority party in the House. The final two officials in the House of Representatives are the Secretary-General and the Sergeant-at-Arms. The **Secretary-General** secures and manages the House records and property, as well as contracts and agreements related to the activities of the House. Meanwhile, the **Sergeant-at-Arms** is tasked to maintain order and safety inside the premises of the House of Representatives.

Legislative Committees and Congress Sessions

Both the Senate and the House of Representatives organize legislative committees to review existing laws and state policies, and investigate the conditions of the country in order to propose appropriate legislation or amendments to existing laws. House Committees evaluate whether the implemented laws are actually effective in improving the affairs of the state. They also evaluate the efficiency of national agencies and organizations tasked with executing these laws. Lastly, the House Committees constantly study the state of the country and create additional or replacement laws to address any problems or issues.

To accomplish these goals, the Committees closely work not just with one another, but with other government agencies in the country.

There are two kinds of committees in each legislative House. Both Houses have **standing committees** which attend to aspects of national affairs that require continuing or comprehensive legislative study, attention, and action. In the Senate, the standing committees are also referred to as Permanent Committees. Some examples of Standing Committees are the Committee on Agriculture and Food which is concerned with food production, agri-business, and agricultural education, among others; Committee on Accounts which focuses on the internal budget of the respective legislative Houses; and the Committee on Rules which is in charge of the processes concerning legislation and impeachment, including the Rules of Procedure Governing Inquiries in Aid of Legislation. This set of rules empowers the House to perform investigations to craft effective laws.

Both Houses also have **special committees** which are also referred to in the Senate as Congressional **ad hoc** or **oversight committees**. In contrast to the standing committees, the special committees attend to national and local matters which are more specific and require immediate legislative action. In the case of the Senate, the special committees also review or evaluate specific laws which have already taken effect in the country. One example of a special committee is the House Committee on Southern Tagalog Development, which is focused on the development of the Southern Tagalog area in terms of economics, tourism, and agriculture, among other aspects. In the Senate, the Joint Congressional Oversight Committee on the Clean Air Act monitors the implementation of the law. The House Committee on Peace, Reconciliation, and Unity, meanwhile, focuses on peace talks and ending armed hostilities in the country.

The composition of these Committees differs between the two Houses. In the Senate, the Committees are composed of a Chairperson, a Vice-Chairperson; committee members, and ex-officio members who are entitled to their membership as part of their election as senators. The Committees in the House of Representatives are also headed by a Chairperson and a Vice-Chairperson; however, their members are grouped into two, namely, the Members for the Majority and the Members for the Minority. As their names suggest, they represent the parties or political groupings with the higher and the lower voting power in the House of Representatives, respectively.

The regular session of Congress starts on the fourth Monday of July and ends before the fourth Monday of the succeeding year. Special or emergency sessions may also be held as per the order of the President. It is in these sessions that the bulk of the legislative process takes place.

The Legislative Process

A law is created through the legislative process. The process starts with the initiation of a **bill** or proposed legislation. The bill contains an outline of the provisions of the proposed law,

as well as an explanatory note providing the background or need for such a law. A bill may be passed individually or jointly by members of Congress, or on behalf of a legislative committee. Both senators and representatives may propose bills that address issues and concerns at the national and local level.

Whatever the agenda or scope of a proposed legislation is, it is expected to respond effectively to the needs of the Filipino public, and conform to the principles upheld by the Constitution. Thus, all proposed laws are subjected to a rigorous process of evaluation and analysis. This process is outlined as follows:

AUTHORSHIP AND LABELING OF THE BILL

The House of Representatives and the Senate author bills to address issues on both the national and local levels. These bills are then submitted for consideration in their respective houses. If the bill is filed in the Senate, it is labeled as “S.B.,” which stands for “Senate Bill.” If it is filed in the House of Representatives, it is labeled as “H.B.,” which stands for “House Bill.” It is also assigned a specific number.

FIRST READING

The author and the title of the bill are read, and the document is referred to the appropriate legislative committee, depending on the agenda of the bill.

COMMITTEE CONSIDERATION/ACTION

The appropriate legislative committee evaluates the bill and may conduct public hearings. In these public hearings, experts on the agenda of the bill are invited to provide insights and information to improve it. After conducting public hearings and discussing the bill, the committee may introduce amendments, consolidate it with other similar bills, or propose a substitute bill. The committee issues a report that details its findings. After the bill has gone through committee consideration, it will then be referred to the Committee on Rules, which shall include the bill in its Calendar of Business.

SECOND READING

This is the stage where the Calendar of Business takes effect. The Calendar of Business includes **sponsorship**, or the generation of support from the other House members; a **period of debate**, where the soundness of a bill is orally deliberated among the legislators; a **period of amendments**, where a bill undergoes revisions; and **nominal voting**, where the House members decide whether the bill should proceed to the next stages of the legislative process. If the bill is considered favorably, it will be scheduled for a Third Reading. If not, it will instead be archived and may be considered for future legislations.

THIRD READING

The revised bill is printed and distributed to the members of the House. Roll call voting then takes place. If the bill is voted for favorably, it is transmitted to the other House for consensus. For instance, if the bill originated in the House of Representatives, it is then passed to the Senate once it gains approval from majority of the representatives of the lower house. If the bill is not voted for favorably, it will instead be archived. Once the bill reaches the other House of Congress, it undergoes the same process of evaluation and approval as undertaken in the previous house.

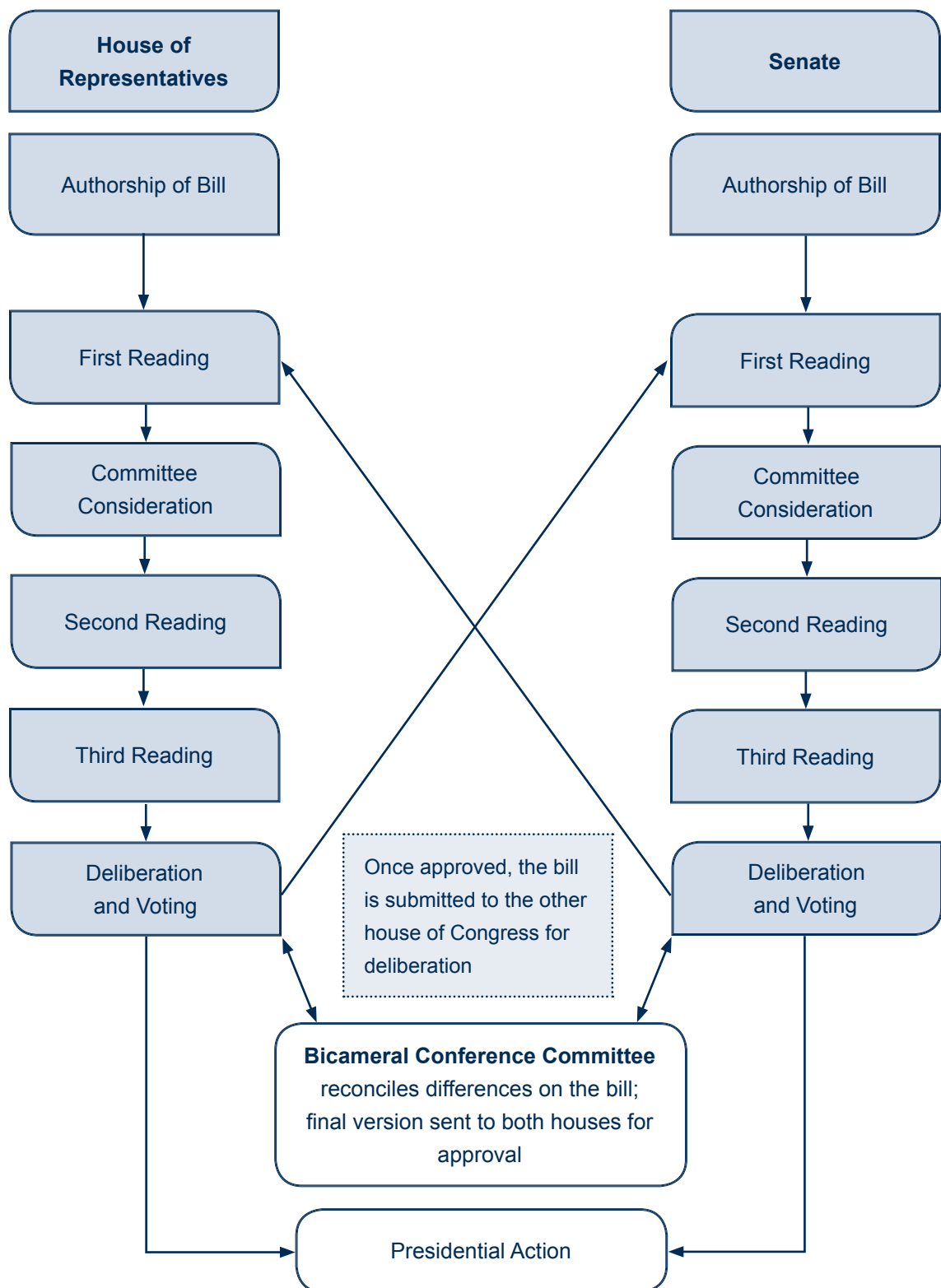
In the event that the two Houses have a disagreement on the contents of the bill, a **Bicameral Conference Committee** is organized to reconcile their differences and make appropriate amendments to the bill. After this, the bill is submitted for the approval of both houses of Congress. At this point, no amendments are allowed. After approval, it is now printed in its final (engrossed) form, and submitted to the Office of the President for approval.

PRESIDENTIAL ACTION

If the President approves the bill, it becomes a law and is labeled as a “Republic Act.” It takes into effect 15 days after approval, and is published in the *Official Gazette* or at least two nationally circulating newspapers. A bill may also lapse into a law if the President does not take action 30 days after receiving it.

Should the President disapprove the bill, he may **veto** it and have it returned to the legislative House where it was originally authored, with an explanation regarding the veto. Upon return to the specific legislative House, its members review the President’s reasons for disapproving the bill. Both legislative Houses may then accept the veto and amend the bill, or override it instead. Overriding a presidential veto is done by a vote of at least 2/3 of the members of each House.

HOW A BILL BECOMES LAW



While the Judicial Branch may not be involved in the actual legislative process, it still has a significant role in assessing approved legislations. The Supreme Court conducts a judicial review of the new law to ensure that it has taken into full consideration all pre-existing laws that may be related to it. The constitutionality of the new law is also taken into account. Should the Supreme Court find the new law acceptable on both counts, the law continues into effect. However, should the Supreme Court find the new law insufficient or unconstitutional, the Supreme Court *en banc* (or as a whole) can vote to strike down the law. The legislators will then have to propose a new bill, or amend the law as may be recommended by the Supreme Court.

Other Roles and Powers of the Philippine Congress

Apart from enacting legislation, the Philippine Congress as a whole, or through its houses and legislative committees, undertakes other significant tasks related to governance. These responsibilities require Congress to work closely with the other branches of government and to exercise specific powers related to these roles.

As part of its legislative function, Congress initiates investigations into matters of public concern. This is in order to gather information that will aid lawmakers in reviewing and amending laws, and making necessary legislation to address local and national issues. In line with this, Congress is empowered to call on government officers and citizens to appear before legislative committees to answer questions and discuss matters relevant to a piece of legislation being considered.

Another important power of Congress in line with its legislative function is the approval of the appropriation of the national budget. The national budget is initially made by the Office of the President, but it is the House of Representatives that evaluates and approves each item in the appropriation. The House enacts an appropriations bill which goes through the legislation process, and must be approved by majority of the members of the House of Representatives. The Senate may also review the appropriations bill and propose amendments to it, but the power to approve the bill lies solely in the lower house. The resulting law is known as the **General Appropriations Act** for the specific fiscal year. Congress can also pass other appropriations bills for specific purposes; however, no law can be passed that will authorize the transfer of appropriations. Should Congress fail to pass an appropriation law at the start of the succeeding fiscal year, the previous appropriations law shall be considered to remain in force until the new appropriations bill is passed by Congress.

The Congress also organizes itself as the **National Board of Canvassers** during the Presidential and Vice-Presidential elections. It also addresses electoral protests related to the election of members of Congress by organizing **electoral tribunals**, which are the sole judges of all election contests relating to the members of the Senate and the House of Representatives. The Senate and House Electoral Tribunals are composed of three justices of the Supreme Court, and six members from either the House of Representatives or the Senate.

The other powers of Congress are in keeping with the system of checks and balances instituted by the Constitution. The Congress has a **Commission on Appointments** that is composed of representatives and senators from both houses, and headed by the President of the Senate. It is the responsibility of the commission to review and approve all executive appointments such as Cabinet officials and heads of government offices. This is to ensure that only those who are fit and qualified to perform the functions and responsibilities required of such positions are appointed in the government. Congress is also the sole branch that has the power to declare a state of war. It is also Congress that authorizes the President, by law, to exercise the powers necessary to address wars or national emergencies. The grant of emergency powers is for a limited duration only, and may be withdrawn by Congress at any time. The Senate, meanwhile, is the sole body that approves all international treaties and agreements entered into by the government.

The impeachment of public officers is also initiated within Congress, particularly the House of Representatives. The process of impeachment begins when any House representative submits a verified impeachment complaint to Congress. After a period of review by the appropriate House committee, the articles of impeachment are submitted to the entire lower house for voting. A vote of 1/3 of all members of the House of Representatives is needed for the complaint to be affirmed. Once the Articles of Impeachment are approved, the matter is forwarded to the Senate, which has the sole power to try and decide all cases of impeachment. A vote of 2/3 of the members of the Senate is needed to convict the impeached official.

RECALL

- Laws are sets of rules or pieces of legislation formulated by the government and followed by all citizens of a state. Legislation also refers to the act of making laws, which is one of the powers of government.
- The rule of law is centered on the belief that a state should be governed by laws, and not by the arbitrary decisions of leaders or government officials. Therefore, laws impose reasonable limits on government power as well as the freedom of citizens. This is to prevent abuse and misuse of powers and rights.
- The crafting of laws is primarily the responsibility of the Philippine Congress. Other branches of government have limited lawmaking capabilities. The executive branch issues pronouncements that have the force of law, while the decisions of the Supreme Court are considered legal precedents or guides, and can influence the creation of laws. Citizens are also given the power to directly propose or decide on legislation through an initiative and a referendum.
- There are several general classifications of laws. There are administrative law, civil service law, civil law, criminal law, labor law, commercial law, and taxation law. Two important characteristics that define a law are validity and continuity.

- The Philippine Congress is a bicameral body composed of the House of Representatives and the Senate. The Senate is composed of 24 senators, while the House of Representatives is comprised of 250 members elected from congressional districts and party list groups.
- Congress organizes legislative committees tasked to review proposed laws and conduct investigations in aid of legislation. Both houses have standing committees that look into national issues that require continual study, attention, and action. Special committees are also organized to look into specific issues which require immediate legislative action.
- The legislative process consists of steps that a proposed piece of legislation or bill goes through before officially becoming a law. The process starts when a bill is authored by a member of Congress and is submitted for consideration in either the House of Representatives or Senate. The bill then goes through a first reading and is submitted to the appropriate legislative committee for evaluation. Within the committee, the law is discussed and appropriate amendments are introduced. The revised or amended bill is then referred back to the body for a second reading. During the second reading, the legislators propose and approve additional amendments to the bill. On the third reading, the body votes to approve the bill. Once the bill is approved, it is then submitted to the other house of Congress for review and concurrence, following the same procedure outlined. Should disagreements arise between the two houses regarding the bill, a conference committee is organized to reconcile them and make final revisions to the bill. The final bill is then submitted back to both houses for final approval. Congress then submits the bill to the President for review and signing.
- Aside from legislation, Congress performs other significant roles in government. As part of its legislative function, Congress is empowered to conduct investigations in aid of legislation and to call on citizens and government officers to appear before legislative committees. It also approves the appropriation of the national budget by crafting the General Appropriations Act. During elections, Congress acts as the National Board of Canvassers for the Presidential and Vice Presidential elections, and organizes electoral tribunals to address protests related to the election of members of Congress. Congress also maintains a system of checks and balances in government through various means. It organizes the Commission on Appointments which evaluates and approves of Presidential appointments. The Congress is also the sole branch of government that has the power to declare a state of war and can authorize the President to exercise certain powers during national emergencies. Additionally, the Senate is the only body authorized to approve all international treaties and agreements. Lastly, the impeachment process is initiated in Congress. The House of Representatives has the authority to approve of the articles of impeachment, while the Senate organizes itself as a court to hear and decide all cases of impeachment.

Examine

A. Identify the following.

- _____ 1. These are sets of rules formulated by the government and followed by all citizens.
- _____ 2. This is the principle which declares that a state should be governed by laws and not by the arbitrary decisions of its leaders.
- _____ 3. This is the legislative branch of the Philippine government tasked with the crafting of laws.
- _____ 4. This is the upper house of the legislative branch.
- _____ 5. This is the lower house of the legislative branch.
- _____ 6. This is the supreme law of the state and the basis of all laws in the country.
- _____ 7. These are the laws created by Congress which are made to create policies that embody state principles.
- _____ 8. These are the representatives who come from organizations that represent various sectors of society.
- _____ 9. These legislative committees focus on national issues that require continual attention and action.
- _____ 10. This is a proposed piece of legislation that is submitted by a member or members of Congress.
- _____ 11. It is at this stage in the legislative process that oral debates are held concerning the bill and amendments are proposed and approved.
- _____ 12. This is organized by Congress in order to resolve disagreements on a certain bill.
- _____ 13. This is a law passed by Congress that outlines the appropriation of the national budget for the fiscal year.
- _____ 14. This is a commission organized by Congress to evaluate and approve Presidential appointees.
- _____ 15. The impeachment process is initiated in this House.

B. Answer the following questions.

1. What is the significance of the rule of law in our government? How does the government uphold the rule of law?

2. How does the legislative process ensure the validity of laws?

3. How do the branches of government work together in the creation of laws?

4. How can citizens participate in the legislative process?

5. Describe the other powers and responsibilities of Congress. How are these roles significant in governance?

EMPOWER

- A. Look up a video of an actual legislation session, either in the Senate or in the House of Representatives. Find out what factors affect the way a bill or a resolution is deliberated among the legislators. Discuss possible ways to improve the proposed piece of legislation.**
- B. Research on records related to the performance of the 16th Congress (e.g., number of bills approved as laws; attendance records; laws which were vetoed or struck down by the Supreme Court). Report your findings in class. In the same report, assess the performance of the 16th Congress, and discuss its implications to lawmaking and governance in the Philippines.**
- C. Conduct research on the legislative system of another country, and compare it to that of the Philippines. Prepare a report based on your findings.**

Lesson 9

THE EXECUTIVE BRANCH AND LOCAL GOVERNMENT

ENGAGE

The executive branch, which includes the President of the republic, his Cabinet, and related agencies and offices, is tasked with the execution of the laws of the state, as well as creating and implementing government policies and programs. The President is aided by his Cabinet in ensuring that government policies and projects respond to the needs of the citizens. The local government units (LGUs) are another important component of the executive branch. They ensure that the provisions of national laws and government policies and programs are effectively implemented in their respective communities.

The executive branch is often the most visible face of the government in the everyday lives of the citizens, and the President and his officials are the frontliners in addressing the many pressing problems of the state. As citizens, it is important for us to know and understand the role of the executive branch to get an idea of how national laws are applied to our local communities. This can help us define our own role as we participate in government programs and comply with government policies. Familiarizing ourselves with the role of the executive branch can help us determine effective governance, and guide us in making informed and responsible choices regarding the leaders of our state.

At the end of the lesson, students are expected to answer the following questions:

1. What are the powers and responsibilities of the executive branch?
2. What is the role of the Cabinet in executing the responsibilities of the executive branch?
3. How do the local government units help the national government uphold good governance?
4. What is the significance of regionalization and autonomy in achieving local development?

Discuss

The President

The executive branch of the Philippine government is headed by the President of the Republic of the Philippines. As the highest official in the country, the President is entitled to a large set of powers and responsibilities. However, these powers are also balanced by certain limitations. Aside from this, individuals who aspire for the presidency have to meet certain prerequisites before being given this position. Finally, like any other important government official, the President is also subject to checks and balances and may be removed from office by impeachment.

Scope and Limits of Presidential Authority

The President is both the head of state and head of government. As **head of state**, he or she is recognized as the representative of the country in international functions and is afforded respect and recognition as a leader of the state. As **head of government**, the president takes on the main responsibilities of governance and has several functions, such as overseeing the local government units, and acting as the Commander-in-Chief of the Armed Forces of the Philippines. In addition, the President is also tasked with the approval or rejection of bills legislated by Congress and the appointment of the Justices of the Supreme Court.

The President also has the authority to issue **Executive Orders** and other pronouncements which are considered to have the same power as laws from Congress. These orders are considered to be **quasi-laws** because they have the effect of laws, are promulgated as such, and may be challenged in the courts. Apart from orders, the President also issues proclamations and administrative orders. These pronouncements relate to the administration of the various offices and agencies within the executive branch, and include tasks such as the reorganization of executive offices; providing for rules and regulations that will be followed by government offices; the declaration of national holidays and emergencies; and the creation of ad hoc committees in the executive branch. Other tasks of the President provided by law include the approval and awarding of National Artists and National Scientists, and the inauguration of businesses which may affect the national economy.

The various powers of the President are subject to limitations prescribed by the Constitution. For instance, the term of a President is limited to six years, without any reelection. Furthermore, the other government branches ensure a system of checks and balances on the powers and actions of the President and the executive branch. For example, the judiciary may declare the orders and pronouncements of the President as unconstitutional. Also, the President is mandated to obtain consent from Congress before approving an international treaty; granting pardons and amnesties; and appointing the members of the Cabinet and other government offices.

The 1987 Constitution also ensures that a President is prevented from exercising authoritarian dictatorship. The constitution states that although the President has the power to declare martial law, this must be only during extreme circumstances (e.g., war or other threats to national safety). Furthermore, martial law must not exist for an indefinite period: it must expire after sixty days, and may be lifted earlier by an act of Congress. In relation to this, the President cannot suspend the writ of *habeas corpus*, except during instances of war and threats to public safety. Any exercise of emergency powers by the President during times of crisis is defined by law and subject to strict limitations and review by both the legislative and judicial branches. Within 48 hours of the declaration of martial law or the suspension of the writ of *habeas corpus*, the President must appear before Congress and submit a report justifying the declaration. Upon review, Congress may reject or uphold the declaration. Any extension of the martial law period or the suspension of the writ of *habeas corpus* requires the consent of Congress, which shall define the length of such extension. Also, any citizen is free to file a petition to the Supreme Court challenging the declaration.

Qualifications for the Presidency and Successors to the Position

In order for an individual to become elected as President, he or she must meet the following qualifications mandated by the 1987 Constitution:

- 1) must be a natural-born Filipino citizen;
- 2) must be a registered voter;
- 3) must be literate;
- 4) must be at least 40 years old by the day of the elections; and
- 5) must have lived in the Philippines for no less than ten years before the day of the election.

In the event that an elected president is unable to perform his or her duties or carry out his or her term of office due to a number of reasons, including resignation, death, or physical incapacity, he or she will be succeeded by the Vice President. Should the Vice-President be unable to finish his or her term due to the same reasons, he or she may be replaced by the Senate President, and then by the Speaker of the House of Representatives.

The President may also be removed from office through **impeachment**. An impeachment case may be filed against the President for several reasons. One is if he or she is found to have knowingly and intentionally violated the Constitution. Another reason is for high crimes such as bribery, treason, graft and corruption, and other offenses which may gravely affect government functions.

The impeachment complaint originates from the House of Representatives and may be filed by a member or members of the lower house. Once Congress has deliberated on and approved the Articles of Impeachment, the matter is then submitted to the Senate which organizes itself as an impeachment court that will hear the trial. The impeachment trial is

presided over by the Chief Justice of the Supreme Court, who does not participate in the voting of the senators. A 2/3 vote of the Senate is required for the President to be convicted.

The Cabinet of the Philippines

Another important part of the executive branch is the Cabinet. The **Cabinet** is composed of executive departments that deal with various aspects of governance and address specific national issues. These various departments are headed by secretaries who are recognized experts in the specific area of governance which their departments handle. The Cabinet secretaries are appointed by the President, subject to the approval of Congress. The Vice-President of the Philippines may also be appointed to head an executive department and serve in the Cabinet.

The Cabinet provides counsel to and closely coordinates with the President in implementing government projects and performing other executive obligations. The secretaries of the executive department are also considered as the President's alter ego and are empowered to issue directives within their respective departments in order to attain their respective goals.

The Office of the President and Vice President, the Cabinet, as well as the various bureaus, agencies, and offices under each executive department, compose the **national government** of the Philippines together with the legislative and judicial branches and the constitutional commissions. On the national scale, the President, Vice President, and the Cabinet address pressing issues that affect the welfare and development of the country as a whole.

The following are the departments or offices which serve as members of the Cabinet:



Department of Interior and Local Government (DILG) – This department supervises the implementation of national policies in the local government units in the country. It also oversees the Philippine National Police.



Department of National Defense (DND) – This department ensures the protection of the state against external forces. To accomplish this goal, the DND heads the Armed Forces of the Philippines, which includes the Philippine Army, Philippine Navy, and the Philippine Air Force.



Department of Agrarian Reform (DAR) – The DAR is involved in executing programs to advance agrarian reform in the country. Such programs ensure that farmers are given sufficient land and are provided agricultural assistance as well.



Department of Agriculture (DA) – The DA spearheads projects to improve agricultural production. The DA also oversees the import and export of agricultural goods.



Department of Education (DepEd) – The DepEd carries out programs aimed at improving education in the country, particularly for the primary and secondary levels. Education programs for institutions of higher education are under the supervision of the Commission on Higher Education (CHED).



Department of Health (DOH) – This department organizes the health programs of the government. It also administers the hospitals and medical centers across the country, and agencies such as the Food and Drug Administration (FDA) and the National Nutrition Council (NNC).



Department of Labor and Employment (DOLE) – The DOLE is in charge of projects that guarantee the well-being of employees in the country. The DOLE also oversees the Philippine Overseas Employment Agency (POEA), which conducts programs intended for overseas Filipino workers or OFWs.



Department of Social Welfare and Development (DSWD) – The DSWD is tasked with developing projects to help Filipinos easily access social services and improve their quality of life. These projects include financial and legal aid to the poor, as well as assistance to victims of violence and natural disasters.



Department of Justice (DOJ) – This department is responsible for upholding law and justice. It supervises the criminal justice system in the country and also heads agencies including the National Bureau of Investigation (NBI), Bureau of Immigration, and the Public Attorney's Office (PAO).



Department of Foreign Affairs (DFA) – The DFA is in charge of our country's diplomatic relations with other states. It also protects the rights of Filipino citizens residing overseas. The DFA oversees the various embassies and consulates of the Philippines in other countries.



Department of Environment and Natural Resources (DENR) – The DENR organizes programs that focus on the conservation and responsible use of the country's natural resources. It also ensures the sustainability and protection of the environment.



Department of Energy (DOE) – This department is mandated to create projects which shall lead to the development, proper use, and conservation of the energy resources of the country, including electricity and oil reserves.



Department of Finance (DOF) – This department is tasked with developing programs and policies which shall help the government generate revenue for its projects. It is also the department that handles the national debt and spearheads the general improvement of the Philippine economy. The Bureau of Internal Revenue (BIR) is an agency under this department.



Department of Budget and Management (DBM) – The DBM is specifically in charge of allocating different resources of the government for the achievement of its objectives. These resources are not only limited to funds, but also include technologies, material goods, and labor.



Department of Trade and Industry (DTI) – The DTI oversees the conduct of trade in the country. It also manages national investments and supervises the operation of industries. In addition, it is tasked with protecting the rights of both consumers and businessmen.



National Economic and Development Authority (NEDA) – The NEDA constantly monitors the national economy and analyzes economic trends. It then uses its findings to create plans for economic policies, and makes recommendations for national and local economic projects.



Department of Tourism (DOT) – This department leads in promoting the tourism industry in the country. It also aims to develop tourism as a way to encourage foreign investment and improve the economic well-being of Filipinos. One way through which this is done is by promoting and developing tourist destinations in the Philippines.



Department of Public Works and Highways (DPWH) – The DPWH is tasked with the planning of public infrastructure projects, and the construction and maintenance of infrastructure facilities throughout the country. These facilities include roads, bridges, public buildings, and drainage systems.



Department of Science and Technology (DOST) – This department implements programs aimed at utilizing the fields of science and technology to contribute to national progress. It also aims to promote scientific awareness among Filipinos.



Department of Transportation (DOTr) – The DOTr plans and implements projects that contribute to the continual improvement of transportation systems throughout the country.



Department of Information and Communication Technology (DICT) – The DICT is a newly-created department under the administration of Benigno S. Aquino III. This department is in charge of improving Information and Communication Technology (ICT) in the country and using it to promote national development.

Local Government

Local government encompasses provinces, cities, municipalities, and barangays, which are referred to as **local government units (LGUs)**. The local government is organized in accordance with the concept of **decentralization**, where local sectors of government are given powers and adequate support by the national government in managing their local affairs. The LGUs are given a portion of the national budget but are also authorized to identify sources of revenue through local taxes and other sources of income. The local government units also have local councils which serve as the legislative body of their respective units. All laws created by these local councils, however, should comply with national laws.

Article X of the 1987 Constitution and the **The Local Government Code of 1991** are the primary bases for the organization and administration of local government units in the country. In particular, the Local Government Code of 1991 outlines the means by which a local government unit is identified and organized, as well as provisions for law enforcement, local taxation, fiscal management, and coordination with the national government. The LGUs are subject to supervision by the President, through the **Department of Interior and Local Government (DILG)**. The DILG also assists LGUs in terms of law enforcement, legislation, and recovery from calamities.

Barangay Government

The barangay is the basic unit of local government in the Philippines. This is where governance directly relates to the concerns of citizens and communities, and where the government programs and policies are applied and directly impact the lives of citizens.

These are seen in various activities such as the implementation of dispute settlements, policies on peace and order, infrastructure projects, and health programs. The barangay is also the forum where citizens are able to directly express their opinions and give suggestions to public officials. In order for an area to be identified as a barangay, it must have a population of 2,000. For highly urbanized areas, such as Metro Manila and other metropolitan areas, a barangay must have at least 5,000 inhabitants.

The barangay government serves as the executive, legislative, and arbitration body of the barangay. Its chief executive is the ***Punong Barangay*** or the Barangay Captain, who performs functions such as the enforcement of laws and ordinances; maintaining peace and order; supervising the planning of the barangay's annual and additional budget and other financial concerns; and leading meetings with other members of the barangay government. The barangay captain and other barangay officials comprise the barangay government. Other appointive officials in the barangay government include the **barangay secretary**, who keeps and updates the records of the meetings of the barangay government; and the **barangay treasurer**, who releases and keeps track of the barangay government's funds. The ***Sangguniang Barangay***, meanwhile, is the legislative council which is composed of seven members. This council undertakes the formulation and passage of ordinances and budget plans. It also performs other functions, such as establishing and promoting barangay cooperatives; organizing lectures on literacy and health; and authorizing the *Punong Barangay* to sign contracts on behalf of the barangay. The ***Lupong Tagapamayapa*** or *Lupon* serves as the dispute settlement and conciliation body of the barangay. It is composed of 10 to 20 members and is led by the *Punong Barangay*. Though the *lupon* is primarily concerned with dispute settlement, it can also address some legal issues in cases brought before them. In addition, the *lupon* also forwards cases where conciliation has failed to the appropriate courts. The ***Sangguniang Kabataan***, meanwhile, is the youth council of the barangay which conducts programs aimed at promoting the welfare of the youth. The council is composed of a chairman, secretary, treasurer, and seven council members.

Municipal Government

Also referred to as the ***bayan***, a **municipality** is defined as a collection of barangays, and is organized based on the following criteria: (1) the constituent communities must earn an average annual income of ₱2,500,000 for at least two years; (2) it must have a population of at least 25,000; and (3) it must have a territory with adjacent lands of at least 50 square kilometers.

The chief executive of the municipal government is the **municipal mayor**. The municipal mayor is primarily in charge of the implementation of government policies and programs within his or her jurisdiction. He or she also performs tasks such as the promulgation and enforcement of laws within the jurisdiction of the municipality; appointing officials to the municipal government; planning the budget proposal of the government; and visiting

the constituent barangays of the municipality every six months to learn more about their concerns. The **municipal vice-mayor** is the second highest official and will replace the mayor should the latter vacate the position before the end of his or her term. In addition, the vice-mayor also serves as the presiding officer of the legislative body of the municipal government known as the ***Sangguniang Bayan***. The *Sangguniang Bayan* is tasked with the formulation of ordinances in the municipality; the approval of proposed budgets for government projects; the creation of ordinances; and the imposition of fines in the municipality. In addition, the *Sangguniang Bayan* also evaluates the ordinances approved by the *Sangguniang Barangay*, and determines if these are in line with the powers and responsibilities of the barangay government. Other municipal officials include the municipal treasurer, municipal budget officer, and municipal engineer or building official, among others. They are responsible for other tasks related to the administration of the municipality.

City Government

A city is similar to a municipality, as it is also made up of a group of barangays. However, a city is distinguished by a higher rate of economic growth and a larger population and territory. The following are the characteristics that define a city: (1) an average annual income of ₱20,000,000 for at least two years; (2) a territory with adjacent lands of at least 100 square kilometers; and (3) a population of at least 150,000. A municipality that develops and eventually attains these characteristics may be reclassified as a city by the national government.

A city may be categorized as a **Component City (CC)**, an **Independent Component City (ICC)**, or as a **Highly Urbanized City (HUC)**. A component city is considered part of a province and elects provincial officials. Examples of component cities are Legazpi City and Isabela City. On the other hand, an independent component city is one that is highly developed. Therefore, it is considered administratively independent from the province and does not elect provincial officials. Naga City and Ormoc City are examples of independent component cities. A highly urbanized city is similar to an independent city, but has a bigger population (at least 200,000) and income (₱50,000,000 for a year). Examples of highly urbanized cities include most cities in Metro Manila (except for the Municipality of Pateros), Bacolod City, Cebu City, Davao City, and Cagayan de Oro City.

The head of the city government is the **City Mayor** who performs the same functions as that of the Municipal Mayor. However, the City Mayor does not prepare the budget for projects of the city government; instead, the heads of its different departments individually provide their proposed budgets. The **Vice-Mayor** serves as the second highest official in the city government, and also presides over the legislative body of the city, the ***Sangguniang Panlungsod***. The *Sangguniang Panlungsod* is composed of councilors, and includes representatives from the youth and other sectors of society. The city government also has other appointive officials who perform tasks which help in ensuring effective governance.

Provincial Government

A **province** is a local government unit that is comprised of municipalities and cities. The law prescribes the following characteristics of a province: (1) it has an average annual income of ₱20,000,000; (2) it has a territory with adjacent lands of at least 2,000 square kilometers; and (3) it has a population of at least 250,000.

The chief executive of the province is the **governor**, and is assisted by the **vice-governor**. The governor monitors the administration of component cities and municipalities in the province in coordination with local government officials, ensures the implementation of laws and ordinances, and create provisions for public service. The governor also directs the formulation of provincial development plans and implements them. The vice-governor is the presiding officer of the provincial legislative body or the ***Sangguniang Panlalawigan***. The other officials in the provincial government include the provincial treasurer, health officer, and the planning and development coordinator, among others. They assist the governor in administering the province and implementing policies and development programs.

Regionalization

The country is divided into administrative units called **regions**, which are composed of provinces that share common territory and whose people have common cultural and historical ties. **Regionalization** is intended to promote greater growth and development throughout the country by identifying significant concerns and problems within each region, and formulating development plans that address them. It is also related to decentralization since regions are given greater administrative freedom, with some regions being granted autonomy from the national government. Regions do not have a separate local government unit, but rather have **regional development councils** which oversee economic planning and the implementation of development programs, in coordination with the local development councils of provinces, cities, and municipalities, and the National Economic Development Agency.

Regional Autonomy

Certain regions are granted autonomy by the national government and are given authority to wield greater and wider powers. These **autonomous regions** are entitled to a certain degree of political integrity, and develop policies and projects which address their distinct needs and conform to the particular character or culture of the region. As such, autonomous regions are entitled to exercise certain governmental powers, such as (1) organizing their own administrative bodies; (2) managing their funds, ancestral domain, and natural resources; and (3) developing their tourism, educational policies, and other mechanisms and programs for the preservation of their cultural heritage.

Regional autonomy, however, does not correspond to total independence from the state, and autonomous regions are still under the authority of the Philippine national government.

The Constitution makes it clear that the projects and policies developed by autonomous regions must not clash with the interests and political unity of the Philippines as a whole. Furthermore, they are also prohibited from creating policies and programs concerning national security, citizenship, currencies, and the electoral process.

According to the Constitution, a certain region would be granted autonomy if its provinces are found to share the following characteristics:

“...[a] common and distinctive historical and cultural heritage, economic and social structures, and other relevant characteristics within the framework of this Constitution and the national sovereignty as well as territorial integrity of the Republic of the Philippines.” (Article X, Section 15, 1987 Constitution)

The Constitution recognizes two areas which meet these requirements: the regions of Cordillera and Muslim Mindanao. Historically, these regions were not fully conquered or influenced by Spanish colonialism. As such, their peoples continue to exhibit an ethnolinguistic, cultural, and religious identity unique from the rest of the country.

Cordillera Administrative Region (CAR)

The Cordillera Administrative Region was established in 1987, and is composed of provinces located within the Cordillera region. Republic Act 6766 was initially passed in 1989 to grant the region full autonomy, but its citizens rejected this in a referendum. In 1998, another proposed organic law, Republic Act 8438, was again rejected in a referendum. According to the NEDA, a possible reason behind the rejection of both organic acts was the lack of awareness among the voting members regarding the characteristics of regional autonomy and the provisions stated in both legislations. It is also said that not all communities in the region were involved in the campaign for raising awareness on regional autonomy. Thus, at present, the CAR is still an administrative region and does not have its own regional government yet. However, efforts still continue to revive the possibility of formulating an organic act that will enable CAR to become a fully autonomous region.

Autonomous Region in Muslim Mindanao (ARMM)

The Autonomous Region in Muslim Mindanao achieved autonomy in 1989. In that year, the region was composed of four provinces: Lanao del Sur (except for Marawi City), Maguindanao, Sulu, and Tawi-Tawi. Marawi City and Basilan (except for Isabela City) were later added to the region in 2001. The component provinces and cities of the ARMM were determined by a plebiscite where the citizens voted whether they were in favor of inclusion in the autonomous region. For this reason, Isabela City, despite being a component city of the province of Basilan, remains outside of the ARMM since its citizens decided not to join the autonomous region.

As an autonomous region, the ARMM has its own regional government with executive and legislative branches. The executive branch is led by the **regional governor** and **vice-governor**. These officials perform tasks similar to those of the heads of other local governments. They are also supported by the **ARMM Cabinet**, which is composed of officials tasked with important administrative functions. These functions pertain to safety and security; maintenance of the records of the regional government office; and coordination between the regional and national government. The ARMM Cabinet functions as a counterpart of the National Cabinet but has a devolved or limited function focusing only on regional affairs. The executive branch of the ARMM Government also includes local offices aimed at addressing the concerns of groups such as women and the youth. Meanwhile, the **executive council** advises the governor regarding governance and approves projects to be implemented by the regional Cabinet. It also assists in the implementation of policies and programs that will address the needs of citizens and encourage development in the region. This council is composed of the Vice-Governor and three Deputy Governors, representing the Muslims, Christians, and indigenous communities in the region. The legislative branch of the ARMM government, meanwhile, is known as the **Regional Legislative Assembly**, which enacts the laws to be implemented in the region. In addition, the assembly also approves the appointment of the members of the ARMM Cabinet, and evaluates the budget proposal submitted by the regional governor.

One important political development expected to bring about great changes in the ARMM is the passage of and the deliberations on the **Bangsamoro Basic Law (BBL)**. The BBL was the product of dialogues between the national government and the rebel groups, MILF and MNLF. It aims to convert the ARMM to the Bangsamoro Autonomous Region (BAR). The Bangsamoro Region would then have political features significantly different from the ARMM. The BBL grants exclusive powers to the regional government, including exercising the powers of the national government in its constituent provinces, cities, and municipalities. Additionally, the government of the proposed Bangsamoro Region is organized as a parliamentary system. This means that the Regional Governor will be replaced by a Chief Minister and the position of the Vice-Governor will be eliminated. The Regional Legislative Assembly, meanwhile, will be replaced by a parliament composed of representatives from the provinces of the region. A Council of Leaders will also be organized that will include the Chief Minister and other local executives such as provincial governors and the mayors.

At present, the approval of the BBL is still pending. One reason behind this is the plan of the Duterte administration to adopt a federal system of government for the country. This would entail the reorganization of the various administrative divisions of the state. There are, however, continued calls for the approval of the BBL, particularly from the MILF and other Muslim groups.

RECALL

- The Executive Branch is headed by the President, who serves as the head of state and head of government. The powers of the President are balanced through a system of checks and balances performed by the other government branches.
- Individuals who aim to run for presidency have to meet a specific set of qualifications. Despite being elected, the President may vacate his or her position due to various reasons which may be voluntary or involuntary, such as through impeachment.
- The Cabinet assists the President in implementing projects for the improvement of the state. It is composed of different departments and offices concerned with a specific area of governance.
- The local government is the lowest division of the executive branch. It encompasses the barangay, the municipality, the city, and the province, collectively known as the local government units (LGUs). These LGUs are under the supervision of the President, through the Department of Interior and Local Government.
- The Local Government Code of 1991 enumerates the different characteristics of each LGU, and defines the powers and obligations of the officials of local governments.
- Although provinces and cities make up regions, not all regions are authorized to have their own governments. The 1987 Constitution mandates that there are exceptions to this, namely the regions in the Cordilleras and in Muslim Mindanao.
- At present, the Cordilleras still constitute an administrative region (CAR), while the Muslim Mindanao area has been converted into an autonomous region (ARMM). Meanwhile, certain groups in the ARMM have advocated for the approval of the Bangsamoro Basic Law, which is expected to significantly change the form and powers of the government in the region.

EXAMINE

A. Identify the following.

- _____ 1. This is the process through which a President may be removed from office.
- _____ 2. This is the Cabinet department which is in charge of managing the national debt, and finding ways to improve the overall condition of the Philippine economy.

- _____ 3. This Cabinet Department conducts programs which guarantee sufficient land for farmers as well as agricultural assistance.
- _____ 4. According to this concept, local sectors of the government shall be granted powers and adequate support by the national government.
- _____ 5. This local government unit (LGU) is where the basic functions of the government are primarily accomplished.
- _____ 6. This body is tasked with the passage of ordinances in the municipality.
- _____ 7. According to the Local Government Code of 1991, this type of city has a larger population and higher average annual income compared to other types of cities.
- _____ 8. This LGU is comprised of municipalities and cities.
- _____ 9. In a provincial government, this body enacts the laws to be implemented among the constituents.
- _____ 10. One of the provisions of this organic law is the granting of more powers exclusive to the ARMM government.

B. Write T if the statement is true; write F if the statement is false.

- _____ 1. The President is the head of state, while the Vice-President is the head of government.
- _____ 2. Quasi-laws do not have the same force of law as laws originally authored in Congress.
- _____ 3. The President may declare martial law, but only under extreme circumstances such as war or other threats to national safety.
- _____ 4. The DepEd implements projects focused on improving education for all school levels.
- _____ 5. The Department of Foreign Affairs (DFA) supervises the Bureau of Immigration.
- _____ 6. The *Lupong Tagapamayapa* acts as the legislative body of the barangay, while the *Sangguniang Barangay* acts as the arbitration body of the barangay.

- _____ 7. The Municipal Mayor presides over the meetings of the *Sangguniang Bayan*.
- _____ 8. A city and a municipality are both a group of barangays, but the municipality has a larger population, land area, and average annual income.
- _____ 9. The officials of the provincial government perform functions similar to those of other local government unit.
- _____ 10. Autonomous regions are not granted total independence from the Philippine state.

C. Answer the following questions.

1. What powers does the President exercise as head of the executive branch?

2. What is the role of the Cabinet in governance?

3. If you were to suggest a new department in the executive cabinet, what would it be?

4. How are local government units empowered to foster development in their respective areas? Choose one LGU and discuss.

5. What are the consequences of the enactment of the Bangsamoro Basic Law? How will this affect the ARMM and the national government?

ANALYZE

Discuss the powers and responsibilities of the national and local governments. Fill out the table with the required information.

Executive Branch	Agencies, Offices, or Units	Officials	Powers and Responsibilities
National Government			
Local Government			

EMPOWER

- Form a group of five members and research on one Cabinet department. Identify the duties, projects, and the incumbent officials of your chosen department. Based on the information you gathered, present an infomercial featuring this department.
- Interview your barangay captain regarding his or her duties and responsibilities as a government official. Ask also about the problems he or she has encountered in governing the barangay, and the solutions which were taken to address these problems. Report to the class what you learned in the interview.
- Research on the *Sangguniang Kabataan* (SK). Look into its role in youth empowerment and in the implementation of local government projects. Discuss the effectiveness of the SK as a political institution based on the information you have gathered.

Lesson 10

THE JUDICIAL BRANCH

ENGAGE

Court hearings are events which are viewed with much value. In legal disputes, involved parties say that they would “see” each other “in court.” Why so? Courts are an element of an important branch of the government: the judicial branch or the judiciary. The judiciary is the interpreter and guardian of the law. To have a better grasp of how the judiciary accomplishes this task, it is important to look into the different judicial and arbitration bodies from the national to the local levels, and how each of them functions. It is also helpful to find out about the responsibilities of the members of the judiciary, and the values that are expected of them. Lastly, it is necessary to have a bird’s eye view of the judicial process in the country, and the rights of citizens in this process. With such awareness, we get to have a full picture of how the government accomplishes its primary task in the state – to protect the rights and freedom of its citizens.

At the end of the lesson, students are expected to answer the following questions:

1. What are the primary functions of the Philippine judiciary?
2. How are the courts in the Philippines organized?
3. What is due process and how is this upheld by the courts?
4. Why is it important to protect the rights of the accused?

DISCUSS

The Philippine Judiciary and Its Functions

The constitution defines judicial power as the power to interpret and apply laws. The judicial branch is considered the “supreme arbiter,” or judge and mediator of controversies and disputes on law and the rights of citizens. In terms of governance, the judiciary decides on the validity, legality, and constitutionality of newly-approved laws. Should these laws or rules be considered unconstitutional, they might undergo change or replacement. The judiciary also decides on policies which are contested between the other two branches of government. Because of this important role, the judiciary often holds itself separate from

the workings of the executive and legislative branches in order to maintain its objectivity and ensure that it is free from bias or undue influence. The Judiciary also performs a vital role in society, as it uses its judicial power to settle disputes which are brought before it. In addition, the judiciary upholds the rule of law by determining violations committed by citizens and prescribing the proper sanctions for it. It also ensures the protection of the rights of citizens in cases of disputes on contracts and agreements, and violations of constitutional rights.

The Supreme Court

The judicial branch of the Philippine government is embodied by the **Supreme Court**. The Supreme Court is the highest court in the land and it supervises all the other courts in the country. The courts in the Philippines are empowered to hear legal cases and render judgment on them. In particular, courts exercise the power of **original jurisdiction**, which means that they can hear a case for the first time. All courts, from the lower courts up to the Supreme Court, possess the power of original jurisdiction. Higher courts have the power of **appellate jurisdiction**, which means that they are able to review and evaluate the decisions made by lower courts.

The Supreme Court exercises jurisdiction on cases involving the constitutionality of laws, treaties, and executive agreements, as well as the constitutionality and application of presidential decrees, proclamations, orders, and other executive pronouncements. It exercises original jurisdiction on cases involving ambassadors, ministers, and consuls. The Supreme Court has appellate jurisdiction on cases involving questions on taxation; criminal cases with a penalty of life imprisonment or higher; cases involving questions of law such as constitutionality of ordinances or regulations; and cases where the jurisdiction of the lower court is an issue. In addition to these primary functions, members of the Supreme Court also comprise the electoral tribunals which investigate and hear cases on election protests. These electoral tribunals are the Presidential Electoral Tribunal (PET); Senate Electoral Tribunal (SET); and the House of Representatives Electoral Tribunal (HRET).

The powers of the Supreme Court come with a set of limitations as well. This is especially true when it comes to the appointment of its members. It is Congress that decides on the requirements for membership in lower courts. Congress also constitutes the Commission on Appointments, which determines the members of the Judicial and Bar Council, the body tasked with recommending the nominees for membership in the Supreme Court. Meanwhile, the final authority in selecting and appointing the Justices of the Supreme Court belongs to the President.

The Supreme Court is composed of the Chief Justice and fourteen (14) Associate Justices. Among the 14 Associate Justices, one is recognized as the Senior Associate Justice. The Chief Justice presides over the hearings conducted by the Supreme Court. He or she also certifies the decisions made by the Court. In addition to these functions, the Chief Justice is

also the chairman of the Judicial and Bar Council. The Chief Justice also serves as the chief presiding officer in impeachment trials. If the Chief Justice is absent for any reason, the Senior Associate Justice acts as the presiding officer in his or her place. Meanwhile, the Supreme Court can make a decision or conduct a hearing either *en banc* – as a whole, with all of the fifteen members hearing the case – or in divisions composed of three, five, or seven justices.

Membership in the Judiciary and the Supreme Court

In order to become a part of the judiciary, an individual must first be a practicing lawyer. Practicing lawyers possess a Bachelor of Laws (LL.B.) or Doctor of Laws (J.D.) degree, and have passed the nationally held Bar examinations which are administered by the Philippine Bar Association and supervised by the Supreme Court. Lawyers normally act as legal counsels for parties that require court hearing and judicial decisions, whether for private or public institutions.

Practicing lawyers may then become a judge of a Philippine court through a rigorous appointive process. This process differs depending on the type of court where a judge may be appointed. As already mentioned, Congress sets the qualifications for membership in the lower courts. In the case of the Supreme Court, its Justices are appointed by the President. However, the potential nominees for appointment in these positions are chosen and screened by the Judicial and Bar Council (JBC). The JBC is composed of members from the three government branches namely, the Chief Justice, the Secretary of Justice, and a member of Congress; a retired Supreme Court Justice; a law professor; a member of the Integrated Bar of the Philippines; and a representative from the general public. Judicial and Bar screens applicants for membership in the Supreme Court based on four qualifications: (1) competence, which involves the educational background and legal experience of the applicant; (2) integrity, which entails a background check and positive testimonies regarding the applicant; (3) probity and independence, which signifies assurance that the applicant does not aim to serve private interests as a Supreme Court Justice; and (4) sound physical, mental, and emotional condition, which would require favorable results in psychological and general medical examinations.

Appointed members of the Supreme Court and other Philippine courts are mandated by the Constitution to hold office until they reach 70 years old, or become incapacitated to perform their responsibilities. Supreme Court Justices may be removed from office through the process of impeachment. The Senate conducts the impeachment trial for the Justices, with the Senate President as the presiding officer.

The Court of Appeals and Lower Courts of the Philippine Judiciary

The Supreme Court administers a network of courts throughout the country that undertakes the task of exercising the powers and responsibilities of the Judiciary. The **Court of Appeals** is the second highest court in the country, and it primarily exercises appellate

jurisdiction over the decisions of regional trial courts. It also reviews administrative cases involving the Ombudsman and the Department of Justice, as well as the decisions of government agencies exercising quasi-judicial functions, including the Office of the President. Aside from these functions, the Court of Appeals also conducts an intermediate review of criminal cases where the penalty is life imprisonment or death, before it is elevated to the Supreme Court. The court consists of one Presiding Justice and sixty-nine (69) Associate Justices, who are then grouped into twenty-three (23) divisions of three justices each.

The lower courts in the country are organized based on area of jurisdiction. **Regional Trial Courts (RTCs)** are categorized into thirteen judicial regions from Luzon to Mindanao. In turn, each province in these judicial regions (including Metro Manila) has RTC branches. The number of RTC branches may depend on the size or the population of the province or city. **Municipal Trial Courts (MTCs)** have jurisdiction over municipalities or towns. If two or more municipalities are covered by an MTC, it becomes a **Municipal Circuit Trial Court (MCTCs)**. In the case of the cities in Metro Manila, the MTCs are referred to as **Metropolitan Trial Courts (MeTCs)**.

Specialized Courts and Quasi-Judicial Bodies in the Philippines

There are also courts in the Philippines which have jurisdiction over cases of a special nature. The ***Sandiganbayan*** is one specialized court that hears cases involving violations committed by public officials, excluding the President, Vice-President, Supreme Court Justices, and the Ombudsman. These cases relate to crimes such as graft, corruption, bribery, and plunder, among others. The *Sandiganbayan* is composed of one Presiding Justice and fourteen (14) Associate Justices.

Another specialized court in the Philippines is the **Court of Tax Appeals** which hears cases concerning tax collection. This Court also hears cases on real estate properties (such as lands and establishments), as well as trade fees and fines. The Court of Tax Appeals consists of one Presiding Justice and eight Associate Justices.

There are also courts which hear cases on violations of Islamic Law (*Shari'a*). These courts are the **Shari'a District Courts (SDCs)** and **Shari'a Circuit Courts (SCCs)**. The jurisdiction of these courts encompasses the ARMM and selected provinces in Mindanao, such as Lanao Del Norte, Sultan Kudarat, and Cotabato Province. The SDCs have judicial power equivalent to that of the RTCs. On the other hand, the SCCs have judicial power equivalent to that of the MCTCs, possessing jurisdiction over more than one municipality.

Aside from these specialized courts, the government also has **quasi-judicial bodies**, or government agencies and offices that do not belong to the judiciary but perform some of their functions, such as arbitration and settling of disputes, and the rendering of judgment on certain cases. An example of a quasi-judicial body in the Philippines is the **National Labor Relations Commission (NLRC)**. It is an office under the Department of Labor and Employment (DOLE)

that hears cases concerning employer and employee relations. The NLRC has divisions which have jurisdiction over the different regions of the country. These divisions are then divided into Regional Arbitration Branches (RABs), which have labor arbiters who hear and decide on cases filed in the NLRC.

Another quasi-judicial body is the **Department of Agrarian Reform Adjudication Board (DARAB)**. It is an office under the Department of Agrarian Reform (DAR) that hears and resolves cases regarding agrarian reform. As such, these cases often involve disputes over agricultural lands, the eviction of land tenants, the determination of title or the owner of a parcel of land, and the verification of boundaries of a certain property.

Due Process and Jurisprudence

All courts that constitute the Judicial Branch are expected to uphold **due process** at all times. This means that the courts are mandated to maintain fairness in all judicial processes, and recognize and protect the rights of an individual involved in a case, whether it is the complainant (the “victim”) or the accused (the “defendant” or “respondent”). One way that due process is ensured in the courts is through precedent and jurisprudence. **Precedent** refers to the principle or rule established by an original or previous legal case which then defines subsequent rulings in other cases. **Jurisprudence**, meanwhile, refers to the study of the nature of laws. Precedent and jurisprudence establish the rules and procedures of the courts to ensure due process when addressing legal cases. Due process is particularly important in addressing criminal cases, since it is the freedom of the accused that is at stake. Therefore, all efforts must be undertaken to ensure that due process is observed and that all rights of the accused are respected throughout the conduct of the investigation and court proceedings.

Criminal Procedure

The criminal procedure is a legal mechanism implemented in the investigation and prosecution of criminal cases. In the Philippine setting, the criminal procedure starts with the filing of a case or a **complaint** through a law enforcement body, such as the Philippine National Police (PNP) or the National Bureau of Investigation (NBI). The specific investigative body then gathers evidence regarding the complaint, including testimonies from witnesses, and objects relevant to the crime or the offense. If the crime or offense is punishable by imprisonment for at least four years, two months, and one day, the complaint is forwarded to a prosecutor for **preliminary investigation**. This preliminary investigation entails not only a review of the evidence regarding the complaint, but also the interrogation of the accused. Through the preliminary investigation, it is determined whether there is sufficient ground to believe that a crime has been committed and that the accused is guilty of it. This preliminary investigation also guarantees that the accounts of the crime by both the complainant and the accused are considered before the procedure goes any further. If the preliminary investigation

reports that there is sufficient cause for a trial, the complaint is then forwarded to either the MTC or the Regional Trial Court (RTC). If there is no cause for trial, the prosecutor dismisses the case.

Once the case is forwarded either to the MTC or RTC, the presiding judge reviews the preliminary investigation report. The judge may dismiss the case if he or she finds insufficient grounds to proceed to trial. If, however, the report is deemed sufficient, an arrest warrant is issued against the accused. The accused is then arrested and placed in custody. While under arrest, the accused has a right to counsel and to bail. **Bail** is a payment given by the accused to secure his or her release from custody, provided that he or she appears before the court when required, along with other conditions that may be imposed by the court. If the accused does not comply with the conditions set by the bail, the money paid is forfeited and the accused will be arrested. The amount and conditions of the bail are determined by the court. The court does not grant bail to persons accused of capital crimes or crimes punishable by life imprisonment or higher. Bail is also denied to the accused in cases where the evidence of guilt is strong.

Upon arrest, the accused is now subject to the judicial process. This process starts with **arraignment**, where the accused is brought to court, the complaint is read, and the accused is asked to enter a plea. If the accused pleads guilty to the offense, he or she will be penalized. If, however, the accused pleads not guilty, the court proceeds to the **pre-trial phase** where the facts relating to the crime are once again reviewed. At this stage the various pieces of evidence related to the case are identified, the facts of the case are stipulated, and the trial is scheduled.

The **trial** commences thirty days from the end of the pre-trial. During the trial, the prosecutor presents the case, calls witnesses to give their testimonies, and presents the corresponding evidence of the crime. Meanwhile, the accused is given the opportunity to examine any evidence and testimony given against him or her. The accused, through his or her legal counsel, is then given the opportunity to provide testimony and present evidence in his or her behalf, which are then examined by the prosecutor. At the end of the trial, the judge declares the court in recess to deliberate and formulate the decision. The recess may last several weeks until such time that the judge has completed his or her deliberations. The court then resumes and calls both parties to render the decision. If the accused is declared “not guilty,” he or she is immediately released; however, if the accused is found guilty of the crime, he or she becomes subject to legal sanctions as determined by the court.

The law provides a number of remedies to the accused such as the filing of a motion for reconsideration or appeal. A **motion for reconsideration** is a request by the accused for a new trial based on the following reasons: (1) if the rights of the accused were violated or there were irregularities committed during the trial; and (2) if there is newly-discovered evidence that may affect the judgment rendered. An **appeal** means that the decision on the case may be elevated to the next higher court for review. The Court of Appeals hears all cases on appeal, and calls the counsels for the accused and the respondent to argue the merits of the case and the decision rendered. The court may reverse, affirm, or modify the decision of

the lower court. It may also return the case to the lower court for a retrial or even dismiss the case. If, however, the case involves a crime with the penalty of life imprisonment or death, it will forward the case and its decision to the Supreme Court. The Supreme Court then reviews the case and renders its decision, which is considered final, irreversible, and binding.

The Rights of the Accused

The accused is granted several rights throughout the criminal proceedings and trial. These rights are based on the constitutional rights of the accused outlined in Article III of the Constitution and are further defined in Rule 115 of the Revised Rules of Criminal Procedure. These are:

- (1) The right to be presumed innocent until proven guilty;
- (2) The right to be informed of the nature and cause of the accusation he or she is facing;
- (3) The right to personally defend himself and take part in all of the phases of the criminal procedure;
- (4) The right to testify as a witness in his or her own behalf;
- (5) The right to refuse to testify against him or herself;
- (6) The right to confront and cross-examine the witness against him or her at the trial;
- (7) The right to be guaranteed of the attendance of witnesses and production of other evidence in his behalf;
- (8) The right to be guaranteed of a speedy, objective, and transparent trial; and
- (9) The right to appeal in all cases allowed and in the manner prescribed by law.

The courts and all officers of the law are required to exert the utmost effort to uphold these rights to ensure that due process is observed throughout the criminal procedure, and that the judiciary performs its obligations as mandated by law.

Barangay Justice System

The judiciary has set in place a system of arbitration and dispute settlement in the barangays in an effort to provide communities a means to amicably settle disputes without proceeding to litigation in the courts. This arbitration body is called the ***Lupong Tagapamayapa***. The *Lupon* is not a court of law and thus could not render judgment on legal cases. However, in the conduct of its mandate to settle disputes among members of the community, it may give legal advice and render certain judgments of fact in the cases brought before it. The purpose of instituting an arbitration and dispute settlement body is to minimize the number of cases brought before the courts; most of which could be resolved if the respective parties engage in amicable dialogue. If the parties succeed in resolving the dispute,

the barangay certifies this through a statement of conciliation. If not, this is the time when the *Lupong Tagapamayapa* is authorized to forward the case to the city or municipal court. With this, the complaint now becomes subject to the criminal procedure already discussed.

RECALL

- The judicial branch of the government exercises judicial power or the power to interpret and apply laws. It is considered the “supreme arbiter” as it decides disputes on law, the rights of citizens, and settles disagreements regarding policy between the legislative and executive branches.
- The judicial branch is embodied by the Supreme Court of the Philippines, the highest court in the country. It administers the lower courts and other special courts in the country, and exercises jurisdiction on cases involving the constitutionality of laws, treaties, and executive agreements, executive pronouncements. It also hears cases involving ambassadors, ministers, and consuls; cases involving questions on taxation; criminal cases with a penalty of life imprisonment or higher; cases involving questions of law; and cases regarding the jurisdiction of lower courts.
- The Supreme Court is composed of the Chief Justice and 14 Associate Justices. The Chief Justice presides over the hearings conducted by the Supreme Court. He or she is also the chair of the Judicial and Bar Council. The Justices of the Supreme Court are appointed by the President, based on the recommendations of the Judicial and Bar Council.
- The Court of Appeals is the second highest court in the country. It exercises appellate jurisdiction over the regional trial courts, and reviews administrative cases involving the Ombudsman and the Department of Justice and the decisions of government agencies. It also conducts an intermediate review of criminal cases where the penalty is life imprisonment or death before they are elevated to the Supreme Court.
- The lower courts in the country are comprised of the Regional Trial Courts, Municipal Trial Courts, Municipal Circuit Trial Courts, and the Metropolitan Trial Courts. Each of these courts is assigned jurisdiction based on territory and locality.
- Specialized courts in the country hear cases of a specific nature. These include the *Sandiganbayan*, the Court of Tax Appeals, and the Shari’a Courts. Additionally, certain government agencies function as quasi-judicial bodies since they have the power to decide on cases and settle disputes. These include the National Labor Relations Commission (NLRC) and the Department of Agrarian Reform Adjudication Board (DARAB).

- The judiciary is mandated to uphold due process at all times. This is ensured through precedent and jurisprudence, where the principles of law become the basis of criminal procedure and the judicial process. The conduct of the criminal procedure and the trial is characterized by processes that ensure proper documentation and consideration of the facts, testimonies, and evidences related to the case. It also recognizes the rights of the accused.
- The *Lupong Tagapamayapa* is a body of arbitration and dispute settlement at the barangay level. The *Lupon* is not a court of law, but it is empowered to hear cases for the purpose of amicable settlement among the parties involved. Arbitration is instituted for the purpose of minimizing the number of cases brought before the courts and engaging the services of citizens in upholding justice in their respective communities.

EXAMINE

A. Identify the following.

- _____ 1. This is one of the powers of the Supreme Court. It is the authority to review decisions made by the other lower courts.
- _____ 2. This is the second highest court in the country.
- _____ 3. These units are under the executive branch of the government. However, they perform arbitration and settling of disputes.
- _____ 4. This is the principle of upholding fairness and respect for human rights that the Judicial Branch is expected to exercise at all times.
- _____ 5. This is a specialized court that hears cases concerning tax collection.
- _____ 6. This is the stage in the criminal procedure when the complaint is formally read in court, and the defendant is asked to plead guilty or not guilty.
- _____ 7. When this is filed, the accused may request the court to conduct a new trial of the case.

- _____ 8. This judicial remedy allows the accused to elevate his or her case to the higher courts for review.
- _____ 9. This is the payment made by the accused to be released from custody.
- _____ 10. This is the arbitration and dispute settlement body in the barangay.

B. Write T if the statement is true; write F if the statement is false.

- _____ 1. The Supreme Court determines the qualifications to become a judge of a lower court.
- _____ 2. Non-lawyers may become part of the judiciary.
- _____ 3. The Judicial and Bar Council provides the set of nominees for appointment in the Supreme Court.
- _____ 4. The House of Representatives conducts the impeachment trial against Supreme Court Justices.
- _____ 5. Regional Trial Courts (RTCs) are categorized into thirteen judicial regions from Luzon to Mindanao.
- _____ 6. Some of the cases heard by the Sandiganbayan involve crimes such as graft, corruption, bribery, and plunder.
- _____ 7. The Shari'a Courts only have jurisdiction over the ARMM.
- _____ 8. The preliminary investigation stage requires only a review of the evidence regarding the complaint.
- _____ 9. The decisions of the Supreme Court on cases submitted on appeal may still be subject to reconsideration.
- _____ 10. The accused may be called by the court to testify against himself or herself.

C. Answer the following questions. Write your responses on the spaces provided.

1. What are the powers and responsibilities of the Supreme Court as the judicial branch of the government?

2. What are the qualifications to become a member of the Supreme Court? In your opinion, what other traits or characteristics are important in becoming a Supreme Court Justice?

3. What are the means by which the judiciary ensures due process in criminal procedure and the judicial process?

4. What are specialized courts? Identify one and discuss its function.

5. Why should the rights of the accused be upheld by the court?

ANALYZE

Find a pair and read the article below. Discuss the questions that follow.

The Katarungang Pambarangay and the Lupon Tagapamayapa

The *Katarungang Pambarangay* is the justice system followed by barangays. It was established during the Marcos administration through the enactment of Presidential Decree No. 1508, signed in 1978, which was later integrated and modified in the Local Government Code of 1991. The *Katarungang Pambarangay* was established in order to reduce the possibility of disputes reaching court litigation, and to engage the members of local communities to resolve conflicts on their own.

Along with the establishment of the *Katarungang Pambarangay* came the creation of the *Lupon Tagapamayapa* or the *Lupon*. The *Lupon* is the body that settles disputes among members of a barangay. It is composed of the *Lupon* Chairman (who is essentially the *Punong Barangay*), and 10 to 20 other members. These members must be residents of the barangay, and must be found to possess “integrity, impartiality, independence

of mind, sense of fairness, and reputation for probity.” Three members of the *Lupon* then form the *Pangkat ng Tagapagkasundo* which is the panel that reconciles the two parties in dispute. The members of the *Pangkat* shall be primarily chosen by the parties themselves. Aside from the Chairman and the *Pangkat*, the *Lupon* also has a Secretary, who documents the proceedings of the *Katarungang Pambarangay* and, if needed, reports these to the appropriate municipal or city court. All of the members of the *Lupong Tagapamayapa* serve a three-year term. The law permits the *Lupon* to deal with all disputes, with a few exceptions, such as disputes which (1) involve the government or any public official; (2) are punishable by a prison term of more than one year; (3) involve real estate properties or parties in a different barangay; and (4) disputes in which “there is no private offended party.”

The *Katarungang Pambarangay* process starts with the mediation of the dispute by the *Lupon* Chairman. After receiving the complaint, the *Lupon* Chairman convenes both parties to personally hear both sides of the dispute. During this mediation meeting, the *Lupon* Chairman may request the parties to bring witnesses with them. If the parties do not reach a settlement after this meeting, the *Lupon* Chairman schedules a date for the *Pangkat ng Tagapagkasundo* to personally hear the dispute. In this hearing, the *Pangkat* again looks into the accounts of both parties as well as the witnesses to the dispute. Through this, the *Pangkat* attempts to clarify the issue at hand and to propose ways to resolve the dispute amicably. Throughout this process, the parties may agree to allow the *Lupon* Chairman or the *Pangkat ng Tagapagkasundo* to arbitrate the dispute. However, the *Lupon* cannot render judgment regarding the guilt of any party nor can it impose sanctions on the “accused”.

The process ends with the *Pangkat* rendering a final decision on the settlement of the dispute, which would then be signed by both parties. However, if the *Pangkat* fails to reach a decision and the dispute is still not settled, the case may then be forwarded to the appropriate municipal or city court. In this sense, the *Katarungang Pambarangay* is considered the first step in the actual judicial process in the country.

SOURCES: 1) “Barangay Justice System (Katarungang Pambarangay): an alternative, community-based mechanism in the Philippines” <http://www.accessfacility.org/barangay-justice-system-katarungang-pambarangay>;
2) “The Local Government Code of the Philippines,” <http://www.chanrobles.com/localgov.htm>

Discussion Questions

1. What is the government’s purpose in establishing the *Katarungang Pambarangay*?
2. What is the main function of the *Lupong Tagapamayapa*? How does the *Lupon* differ from actual courts in the country?
3. Who are the members of the *Lupong Tagapagpamayapa*? What are the qualifications for membership in the *Lupon*?

4. What happens when the *Pangkat ng Tagapagkasundo* does not reach a decision to settle the dispute?
5. What advantages result from implementing the arbitration and dispute-settlement process in the barangay?

EMPOWER

- A. Research and analyze a news article regarding a legal case or issue. Research information about the facts and legal bases regarding the issue. Analyze and evaluate the different points and views and report your findings in class.**
- B. Form a group composed of three members and conduct an interview with a local prosecutor or a public defender. Ask questions on the following:**
 - a. the nature of his or her work;**
 - b. his or her preparation for a case;**
 - c. the problems he or she has encountered as a legal practitioner; and**
 - d. the solutions he or she undertook to address these problems.**

Afterwards, submit a written report containing the transcript of the interview. In the same written report, reflect on the relevance of prosecutors to the judicial process.

Lesson 11

ELECTIONS IN THE PHILIPPINES

ENGAGE

Elections are special events in the Philippines and they have become part of the national consciousness. In fact, the “election season” attracts a great amount of media coverage – from the moment a politician announces his or her intention to run for office, up to the campaign period, the counting of the last votes after the election, and the proclamation of winners. Elections are given great importance since they are the mechanism through which citizens are able to express their right to choose their leaders. Elections are also a democratic exercise of the citizens’ right to be involved in government affairs. Therefore, as citizens, we must have knowledge of the electoral process, how candidates and voters interact throughout this process, and the various agencies and groups that play a role in the elections. By understanding the electoral process and our role in it, we will be able to help address the challenges and issues that affect elections in our country.

At the end of the lesson, students are expected to answer the following questions:

1. What is the significance of the electoral process in upholding democracy in the country?
2. How does the government ensure honest elections in the country?
3. What are the significance of political parties in the electoral process?
4. What are the different issues that have been encountered in Philippine elections? How do these issues affect elections in the country?

DISCUSS

Elections and Electoral Systems

Election is the formal decision-making process by which citizens choose public officials. The right to participate in elections is called **suffrage** and is an important right of citizens. Suffrage not only refers to the right to vote, but also the right to run for office. Article V of the 1987 Constitution sets the conditions by which Filipino citizens may exercise suffrage. For a

citizen to exercise suffrage, he or she must be at least eighteen years old and a resident of the Philippines for at least a year. He or she should likewise be residing for at least six months in the district or place where he or she wishes to vote.

Various states have implemented different systems by which citizens are able to select government officials. The following are the most common electoral systems practiced throughout the world.

The **plurality system** is an electoral system where the candidate who gets the most number of votes is elected into office. This is the electoral system generally followed in Philippine elections.

Proportional representation is an electoral system where a candidate must gain a required number of votes (called a *quota*) in order to be elected into office. This system ensures that all sectors and groups in the state gain representation in government. This electoral system is applied in the election of party-list representatives to the Philippine Congress. In order to gain a seat in the House of Representatives, a party-list group must gain at least 2% of the total votes cast for the party-list system. Those groups who gain more than 2% of the vote are entitled to an additional seat in the House, for a maximum of three seats per party.

In a **run-off system**, elections are held in stages to determine the eventual winners. Some countries implement a **two-round run-off election**, where a preliminary election is held where all candidates participate, and a second round of voting follows where only the top two candidates participate. Other countries implement **instant run-off voting**, where there is only one election where voters rank the candidates in their ballots. During the vote-counting, the top-ranked candidates are identified and the number of votes cast for them are determined. The highest-ranked candidate with the most number of votes cast in his or her favor is then declared the winner.

The **primary system** also conducts elections in stages. A preliminary election, or **primary**, is conducted within political parties to determine their candidates who will run in the general election. These primaries can either be **closed**, where only official party members are allowed to participate, or **open**, where other citizens who are not party members may choose to participate in the primary of their chosen party. Primaries are also classified as direct or indirect. In **direct primaries**, the voters directly choose the party candidate. In **indirect primaries**, the voters elect delegates, who then convene and choose the party candidate. The chosen party candidates then participate in a general election. The United States is one country that practices the primary system. The top two political parties – the Republican Party and Democratic Party – hold closed primaries. Depending on the state where the primaries are held, they can either be direct or indirect primaries.

The Omnibus Election Code and Election Organizations in the Philippines

In the Philippine setting, the electoral process is discussed most extensively through the *Batas Pambansa Bilang 881*, otherwise known as the **Omnibus Election Code**. This code contains all of the rules governing the conduct of elections in the Philippines, including qualifications for aspiring election candidates, and dates important to the election process. It also contains provisions on the role of the **Commission on Elections (COMELEC)**, which is the main government agency that oversees elections in the country, and decides on all matters concerning the electoral process. It is the primary goal of the COMELEC to ensure the conduct of free, fair, and honest elections. As such, the COMELEC is mandated by the Constitution to be independent from all of the branches of government. During the election period, the COMELEC is authorized to supervise and control all government agencies, public officials, and government employees whose duties are related to the conduct of the elections. It can also direct the police and armed forces to secure areas where election-related violence is rampant to ensure the conduct of free and fair elections. In addition, the COMELEC is authorized by Congress to recommend the election budget; impose disciplinary actions against violators of election laws; and investigate cases of election-related crimes. The COMELEC is composed of the COMELEC Chairman and six Commissioners, who are all appointed by the President.

There are also organizations that keep close watch on the entire election process and perform other election-related tasks. These groups are referred to as **election watchdogs**. One of these is the **Parish Pastoral Council for Responsible Voting (PPCRV)**. Accredited by the COMELEC in 2001, the PPCRV serves as a citizens' arm of the COMELEC. As such, the PPCRV spearheads programs specifically aimed at monitoring election results; providing education to the voting public and assisting voters in polling precincts on election day. The PPCRV is composed of members drawn from various sectors of society. The PPCRV is also non-partisan and independent from any government entity.

Another election watchdog in the country is the **National Citizens' Movement for Free Elections (NAMFREL)**. The NAMFREL coordinates with the PPCRV and the National Press Club of the Philippines (NPC) in performing its functions. The NAMFREL is also under the direct control of the COMELEC, and helps the Commission spread awareness on election-related matters. Specifically, the NAMFREL and the NPC conduct information dissemination campaigns and organize forums involving the election candidates. Aside from this, the NAMFREL is also mandated to inform the COMELEC regarding violations of the Omnibus Election Code. Lastly the NAMFREL implements Operation Quick Count, which is a parallel counting of votes, in order to monitor the election.

The Philippine Electoral Process

Philippine elections are held both at the national and local levels. Voters elect the President and Vice-President, senators, district and party-list representatives, governors and mayors, local council members, and barangay officials.

The whole election process involves the participation of both the candidates and the voters. On the part of the candidates, their involvement officially starts with their submission of **certificates of candidacy (COCs)** to the COMELEC. By filing the COC, the aspiring candidate formally expresses his or her desire to campaign and run for office. Not everyone who submits a COC is automatically entitled to a spot in the electoral race, however. The COMELEC may still deem an applicant as a “nuisance candidate,” or with intent to “mock” the election process. A candidate may also be considered disqualified before, during, or even after the elections. This may happen due to several reasons, such as bribery of voters; engaging in acts of violence and terrorism; receiving donations from foreign governments; and engaging in black propaganda against a fellow candidate.

If the candidate is found to have met the conditions and eligibility requirements for the position he or she is running for, the COMELEC declares the candidate qualified to run in the elections. After the COMELEC announces the official list of qualified candidates for the elections, the **campaign period** officially commences. During the campaign period, the candidates and political parties engage in various activities to convince voters to elect them into office. They discuss their advocacies and prospective projects to the voters. They also attempt to create a unique mark on the minds of the voters. These are done through personal visits to constituent areas; campaign ads on television, radio, and other forms of media; and even participation in election debates or forums on television or in other public venues. According to the Omnibus Election Code, the election and campaign periods vary depending on the position a candidate is running for. Presidential and Vice Presidential candidates are entitled to a 90-day campaign period. Candidates for seats in Congress are allowed to campaign for 45 days. The same goes for those running for positions in the local government; however, the campaign period for barangay elections is limited to 15 days. The candidates are not allowed to campaign on the day before and during the day of the elections itself.

The voters, on the other hand, are expected not only to pay attention to the activities during the campaign period, but also to actively communicate with the candidates. This is so they can forward concerns that they would like the candidates to address, and question the candidates regarding their election platforms. Using the information gained during the campaign period, the voters are expected to elect the most capable candidates in the government.

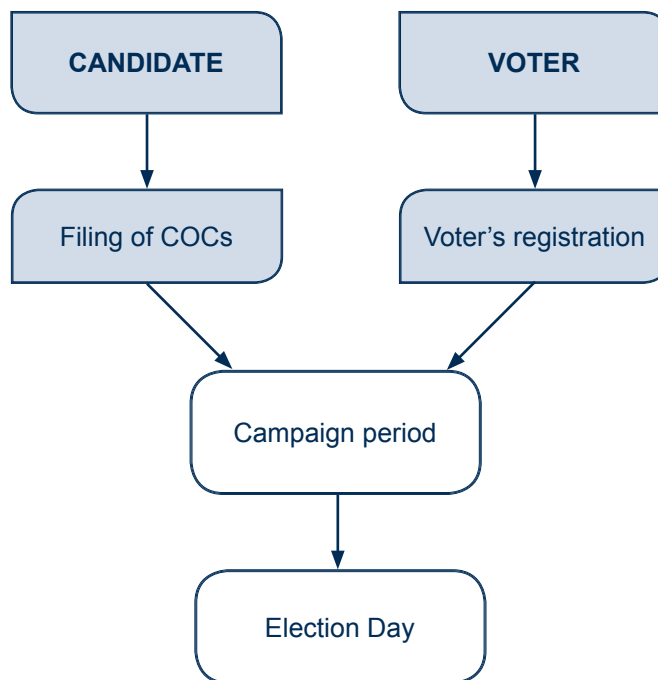
The Voters

In order for a Filipino to participate as a voter in the elections, he or she must meet certain qualifications, including being (1) at least 18 years old by the day of the elections (Sangguniang Kabataan voters must be 15 to 30 years old); (2) a resident of the country for at least a year; (3) a resident of the place where he or she will be voting for at least six months; and (4) not disqualified by law. A Filipino may be considered disqualified to vote if he or she is found to have (1) been imprisoned for at least one year without pardon or amnesty; (2) committed crimes against national security; or (3) been deemed mentally incapable to vote.

A potential voter must apply for registration in the COMELEC office in his or her local community or in the locality where he or she is expected to vote. As of the 2016 national elections, voter registration features the use of biometrics. When a voter registers, his or her fingerprints are scanned and registered in the COMELEC database. On election day, voter identity is confirmed by checking voter information and fingerprints. This is to ensure proper identification at the polls and prevent fraud.

Meanwhile, those who are unable to vote in their respective localities on the day of the elections may apply for **absentee voting**. Absentee voters include people who need to perform vital tasks on election day, such as public officials and employees, military and police officers, and journalists and other media workers. Overseas Filipino workers (OFWs) may also apply for absentee voting to help them avoid the inconvenience of returning to the country to participate in the elections. They vote one week earlier than the rest of the voting public.

The general overview of the electoral process in the country is outlined below:



Conduct of the Elections

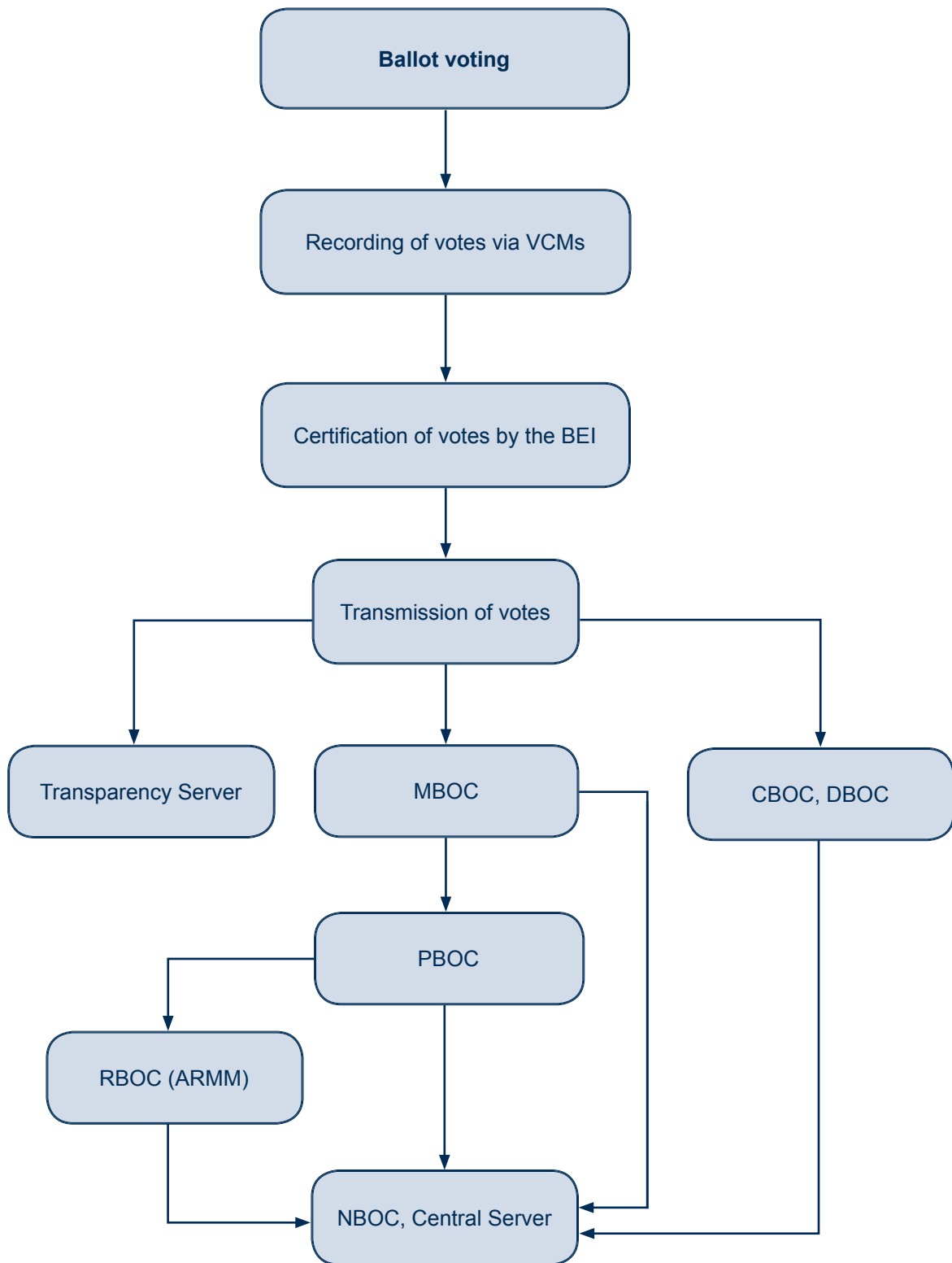
The Constitution sets the national elections on the second Monday of May, while barangay and Sangguniang Kabataan elections take place on the last Monday of October. Since 2010, the COMELEC has implemented the use of the **Automated Election System (AES)** in the elections. The AES has several components. One of these is the **Vote Counting Machines (VCMs)**, which are also known as the **Precinct Count Optical Scan (PCOS) Machines**. Automated elections are expected to result in faster and more accurate vote-counting.

Elections take place in polling precincts located in designated elementary and secondary schools in each barangay. In these polling precincts, voters fill out their ballots with their choices for each position from the local to the national level. These ballots are then entered into the vote counting machines to record the votes. These vote counts generated by the VCMS are referred to as **election returns (ERs)**.

After the votes for the specific precinct are counted, these are documented as **certificates of canvass (COCs)**, which are certified by the **Board of Election Inspectors (BEI)** composed of the assigned public school teachers and other volunteers. The BEI facilitates the voting in the precincts, and is assisted by poll watchers from the NAMFREL, PPCRV, and political parties. These poll watchers observe the conduct of polls and are authorized to file complaints regarding any violations or issues regarding the voting procedure. After the BEI certifies the tallied election returns, these are then transmitted to the other servers which are all part of the automated election system. These are the central server (the server assigned to the COMELEC); the transparency server (the server assigned to the election watchdog organizations, political parties, and the media); and the **Municipal Board of Canvassers (MBOC)**. In the case of Metro Manila, the election returns are transmitted to the **City Board of Canvassers (CBOC)** instead of the MBOC. An additional special case is that of Taguig-Pateros. They are jointly referred to as one “legislative district” for the elections; thus, the election returns from Taguig and Pateros reach the District Board of Canvassers (DBOC).

The election returns that reach the MBOC are now transmitted to the **Provincial Board of Canvassers (PBOC)** server which gathers the election returns from each municipality, and then transmits them to the **National Board of Canvassers (NBOC)**. In the case of the CBOC and the DBOC, they immediately transmit the election returns to the NBOC. Meanwhile, in the ARMM, the election returns are transmitted to the **Regional Board of Canvassers (RBOC)** before reaching the NBOC. All of these election returns also reach the central server. The COMELEC acts as the NBOC for the senatorial and party-list representative elections, while Congress acts as the NBOC for the Presidential and Vice Presidential Elections. If problems are encountered in the usage of the vote counting machines, the certificates of canvass, which contain manually-counted votes may be physically delivered to the NBOC. The canvassing of the election returns takes place within a few days to a month. After this, the winners are officially proclaimed, and are later sworn into office.

The Automated Election System and the canvassing of votes are summarized in the chart below:



Other Electoral Events

The COMELEC anticipates various instances that may hamper or interrupt the elections, and has devised means to address such challenges. For example, elections may be postponed if they may be hampered by violence, terrorism, loss or destruction of paraphernalia or records, as well as natural calamities. The COMELEC may also declare failure of elections in certain areas of the country due to the same reasons, as well as widespread electoral fraud. In such instances, the COMELEC may call for **special elections**, which shall be held not later than 30 days after the declaration of postponement or failure of elections.

Aside from special elections, another special electoral event that may be called by the government is a **snap election**. Snap elections are held earlier than the date prescribed by the law. In 1985, President Ferdinand Marcos called for snap elections to be held in the following year in an effort to reassert his legitimacy and power in government. At that time, Marcos was facing growing opposition against his rule. The snap elections held in 1986, however, was embroiled in controversy, as numerous cases of electoral fraud and violence were reported. Marcos won the elections but the results were contested by various sectors, and the protests that resulted eventually led to the 1986 EDSA Revolution.

Philippine Political Parties

A **political party** is a group of people organized to participate in elections and hold power in government, and its members advocate a specific set of policies, programs, and ideologies. Political parties are oriented toward upholding the general welfare, as well as the interests of their supporters. In the Philippines, political parties are not strictly defined by ideological distinctions. Political parties are mainly mechanisms to help candidates win in the elections. They facilitate the campaign of the candidates affiliated with them by organizing events and creating and distributing campaign materials. They also guarantee a stable financial source for the candidate for the whole campaign period.

Since Philippine political parties primarily function as campaign machineries, politicians tend to shift their loyalty from one party to another. Because of this, Philippine political parties tend to be identified by their history and prominent members.

The following are some of the notable political parties and groups in the Philippines.

Nacionalista Party (NP)

The Nacionalista Party (NP) is the oldest political party in the Philippines. It was established in 1907 by Manuel Quezon and Sergio Osmeña. The Nacionalista Party dominated the Commonwealth Period and served as the political group that pushed for Philippine independence. However, Manuel Roxas, who was one of its members, later separated from the Nacionalista Party allegedly due to personal differences with Quezon, as well as the desire to form a more “liberal” political party. Most of the elected Presidents

of the country ran under the banner of the Nacionalista Party, including Ramon Magsaysay, Carlos P. Garcia, and Ferdinand Marcos.

Liberal Party (LP)

The Liberal Party (LP) is the second oldest political party in the country. Established by Manuel Roxas in 1946, the Liberal Party was a faction that broke away from the Nacionalista Party. Its political presence was well noted during the early 1970s when it opposed the rule of former President Ferdinand Marcos. The Liberal Party is also noted for backing the candidacy of Benigno Simeon “Noy” Aquino III, who won the 2010 presidential elections.

Kilusang Bagong Lipunan (KBL)

The Kilusang Bagong Lipunan (KBL) is the political party formed by President Ferdinand Marcos during the Martial Law Period. Although the Liberal Party and other opposing parties had a significant presence in the country, the KBL was the sole political party that was allowed to function during that time. Presently, the Marcoses still serve as the key personalities in the KBL. The KBL supported the candidacy of Ferdinand “Bongbong” Marcos Jr. in the 2016 vice-presidential elections.

Partidong Demokratikong Pilipino Lakas ng Bayan (PDP-LABAN)

The PDP-LABAN party was born out of a merger in 1983 between the Partido Demokratikong Pilipino (PDP) founded by Aquilino Pimentel Jr., and Lakas ng Bayan (LABAN) founded by Benigno “Ninoy” Aquino, Jr.. The two parties merged as a result of a shared advocacy between Pimentel and Aquino to put an end to Martial Law. It eventually succeeded, as the party supported Corazon Aquino, the wife of Ninoy, to replace then President Ferdinand Marcos in power. The current President of the Philippines, Rodrigo Duterte, also ran under PDP-LABAN.

Laban ng Demokratikong Pilipino (LDP)

The Laban ng Demokratikong Pilipino (LDP) party was established in 1988. It was the product of an alliance between former Tarlac Representative Jose “Peping” Cojuangco and former Speaker Ramon Mitra, Jr. At the time, Cojuangco split from PDP-LABAN, while Mitra headed Lakas ng Bansa, another minor political party. It later became one of the parties that supported the presidency of Joseph Ejercito Estrada in 2001. In 2004, the LDP supported the candidacy of Fernando Poe, Jr. when he ran for president.

Lakas-Christian Muslim Democrats (Lakas-CMD)

The Lakas-CMD party was a product of the merging of two parties: the Partido Lakas Tao, established by Fidel V. Ramos, and the National Union of Christian Democrats (NUCD) formed by Raul Manglapus. At that time, these two parties were known as the Lakas-NUCD. The Lakas-NUCD Party helped elect Ramos to the presidency in 1992. In the 1998 elections, the Union of Muslim Democrats of the Philippines (UMDP) joined the Lakas-NUCD, thus creating the Lakas-NUCD-UMDP. Six years later, the party later changed its name to Lakas-CMD, the name for which it is currently known. It became the party under which former President Gloria-Macapagal Arroyo ran in 2004.

Pwersa ng Masang Pilipino (PMP)

The Pwersa ng Masang Pilipino (PMP), originally named Partido ng Masang Pilipino, was formed by former President Joseph Ejercito Estrada in 1991. When Estrada was still serving as a Senator, PMP was first envisioned as an organization to help advance his project known as the Economic Recovery Action Program. Later, it became the party that primarily backed his 2001 presidential bid. PMP has since then regularly participated in the national elections, mainly securing slots in the Senate. Estrada still serves as the chairperson of the party at present.

United Nationalist Alliance (UNA)

The United Nationalist Alliance (UNA) is one of the newer political parties in the Philippines. It was founded in 2013 by former Vice President Jejomar Binay, who was previously a member of PDP-LABAN. It was said that he quit from PDP-LABAN due to personal conflicts with Aquilino Pimentel III, who was then the president of the party. Binay then signed a coalition agreement with the Pwersa ng Masang Pilipino, thus forming UNA. During that time, UNA was a coalition affiliated with several other smaller parties. These parties include Bagong Lakas ng Nueva Ecija (BALANE) and People's Champ Movement, based in Sarangani. In 2015, UNA was officially recognized as a political party. It then became the main political party behind Binay's bid for presidency in the 2016 national elections.

People's Reform Party (PRP)

The People's Reform Party (PRP) was established by former Senator Miriam Defensor-Santiago to back her presidential bid in 1992. The PRP also served as her political party during the 1998 and 2016 presidential elections. In addition, the PRP also supported former Senators Ramon Magsaysay, Jr. and Francisco "Kit" Tatad in their vice presidential bids in 1992 and 1998, respectively.

Philippine Elections: Issues and Challenges

Philippine elections have undergone developments throughout the years; the most significant of these is the transition from a manual to an automated voting process. Through this, the issues of inaccuracies and delays in the vote-counting process are addressed. However, political analysts believe that automation still fails to address other issues and challenges in the electoral process. These issues have affected the perception of the public towards the credibility of elections and often lead to protests.

Electoral fraud

Philippine elections have been noted for frequent occurrences of electoral fraud. **Electoral fraud** refers to any instance of illegal intervention in any stage of the election process. Such instances include vote buying and manipulation of vote ballots, among others.

The first-ever reported electoral fraud in the Philippines is believed to have occurred during the Tejeros Convention in 1897. It was said that even before the actual elections for the revolutionary government took place, the ballots had already been filled up with names. In the 1935 elections, General Aguinaldo complained that President Quezon cheated heavily to secure his victory at the polls.

Philippine politics in the later decades also saw the prevalence of electoral fraud. For instance, the 1986 snap elections results instigated much controversy. The COMELEC count declared Ferdinand Marcos as the winner. On the other hand, the NAMFREL, which was appointed by the COMELEC to conduct a parallel count, reported that it was Corason Aquino who won the elections. It was reported that the military intervened heavily with the counting of votes; at the same time, it was believed that voters were threatened and bribed by the Marcos administration.

Other notable cases of electoral fraud took place during the subsequent Philippine elections. The 1992 presidential elections were known for a slow tallying of votes – only 11% of the approximately 26 million votes have been counted by the Friday following the actual voting day. Miriam Defensor-Santiago, who was then one of the candidates for presidency, claimed that her fellow candidate Fidel Ramos was causing this delay in order to manipulate the election results. She then filed an electoral protest against Ramos. However, this case was later dismissed. Then, in the 1995 senatorial and local elections, there were allegations of *dagdag-bawas*. The NAMFREL defines *dagdag-bawas* as a form of election fraud in which a certain number of votes are added to those of one candidate, while subtracting the same total number of votes from another candidate, keeping the number of votes cast intact. Vote-buying was also found to be prevalent during this election. Then COMELEC Commissioner Ressureccion Borra himself declared this, and said that voters were bribed for around P200 to P300.

The 2004 presidential elections were noted for the “Hello Garci” scandal, which involved then COMELEC Commissioner Virgilio Garcillano and former President Gloria Macapagal Arroyo.

During that time, Arroyo was seeking for a new full term as president. It was reported that in order to secure her victory, she contacted Garcillano via phone. In their conversation, Arroyo allegedly requested Garcillano to help her win the elections by a margin of about one-million votes. Arroyo won the elections, but the Hello Garci scandal remains as one of the largest political and electoral controversies in Philippine history. In the recent 2016 vice-presidential elections, candidate Ferdinand “Bongbong” Marcos Jr., requested that the counting of votes be stopped, claiming that the votes were manipulated through *dagdag-bawas*. The COMELEC later denied this, and Leni Robredo was declared as the winner of the vice presidential elections.

Election-related violence

During every election, there are several reports of candidates resorting to acts of violence in order to secure votes or influence the elections to their favor. **Election-related violence** encompasses death threats or acts of murder committed against rival candidates and their supporters; deliberate damaging of campaign materials; and incidents of bombings and shootings that target rival candidates and civilians. Some candidates are said to hire military officers or private gunmen to commit these acts of violence. Election-related violence is said to take place during the campaign period, on election day, and even during the vote counting stage. Some election-related violent acts are also found to be committed even before the start of the campaign period.

The 1986 snap elections is one such instance in which election-related violence was committed. The military was alleged to have intervened in the vote-counting process, and several incidents of election-related killings were reported nationwide. About 364 cases of election-related violence were reported during this time, with 153 deaths recorded. In the 1998 elections, it was said that COMELEC technicians assigned in Maguindanao received death threats from the losing candidates. Thus, even though the counting of the votes was not yet officially finished, these technicians had to return to Manila. That year, approximately 267 cases of election-related violence were recorded, with 87 people killed and 167 wounded.

The more recent elections were still found to be fraught with violence. For example, during the 2010 national elections, bombings were reported in several provinces in Mindanao, including Misamis Occidental and Maguindanao. The victims included media reporters and candidates. A total of around 180 cases of election-related incidents were reported. During the 2016 national elections, the Commission on Human Rights (CHR) reported 49 cases of politically-motivated violence; such cases include murder, physical attacks, and harassments. These incidents took place from June 2015 to April 2016. On the actual day of the election, at least 10 people were said to have been killed. According to the organization Legal Network for Truthful Elections (LENTE), 230 cases of election offenses took place on election day, which also included vote-buying incidents. It is worth noting that the number of cases of election-related violence has been decreasing over the years. However, the existence of such incidents still shows the enduring presence of violence in Philippine elections.

RECALL

- The rules governing the conduct of elections in the Philippines are contained in the Omnibus Election Code. The Omnibus Election Code also extensively discusses the roles and responsibilities of the Commission on Elections (COMELEC). The COMELEC is chiefly responsible for administering the entire electoral process, and deciding on all election-related matters.
- Aside from the COMELEC, the Parish Pastoral Council for Responsible Voting (PPCRV) and the National Citizens' Movement for Free Elections (NAMFREL) also play significant roles in the electoral process. They do not administer the elections, but they help the COMELEC spread awareness among voters. They also conduct parallel counts with the COMELEC to ensure the credibility of the election results.
- Philippine elections involve active participation not only from the candidates, but also from the voting public as well. The electoral process consists of several stages, namely, the filing of certificates of candidacy (COCs); the campaign period; the day of the election; the tallying of votes; and the announcement of the winners. The recent elections in the country are noted for their usage of the Automated Election System (AES), which is expected to ensure a faster and more accurate tallying of votes.
- In the event of widespread election-related violence, significant damage to election paraphernalia, or natural calamities, the COMELEC may postpone the elections in certain areas or declare a failure of elections. The COMELEC then calls for special elections in these areas. The government can also call for snap elections which are held earlier than prescribed by law.
- Political parties in the Philippines function mainly as mechanisms to facilitate campaigning for the elections. Furthermore, they are said to be indistinguishable by ideology. Instead, they tend to be identified through their history and the personalities affiliated with them.
- Philippine elections have been subject to various issues and challenges throughout history. Two significant electoral issues are electoral fraud and election-related violence.

EXAMINE

A. Identify the following.

- _____ 1. This is the law which contains provisions on all matters related to Philippine elections.
- _____ 2. This is the stage of the election process when a candidate proves to voters that he or she is the most fit for a certain position in the government.
- _____ 3. These individuals do not vote on the day of the election, and instead vote a week ahead.
- _____ 4. This system was used during the recent elections in order to make the canvassing of votes faster and more accurate.
- _____ 5. They facilitate the voting procedure in the polling precincts on the day of the election.
- _____ 6. The COMELEC calls for this type of election after declaring postponement or failure of elections.
- _____ 7. This is the political party which helped Fidel Ramos win the 1992 presidential elections.
- _____ 8. Most of the elected presidents in the country ran under this political party.
- _____ 9. This is a form of electoral fraud in which the votes for a certain candidate are intentionally increased, while the votes for another candidate are decreased.
- _____ 10. This election-related issue encompasses death threats, bombings, and shootings, either against civilians or rival candidates.

B. Write T if the statement is true and F if the statement is false.

- _____ 1. The COMELEC is authorized to supervise the various government agencies and officials during the conduct of elections.
- _____ 2. The PPCRV and the NAMFREL are not supervised by the COMELEC.

- _____ 3. The first stage of the participation of candidates in the election process is the filing of a certificate of canvass (COC).
- _____ 4. According to the Omnibus Election Code, candidates for the presidential, vice presidential, and senatorial races are entitled to a 90-day campaign period.
- _____ 5. OFWs may apply for absentee voting to help them avoid the inconvenience of returning to the country to participate in the elections.
- _____ 6. The Senate acts as the National Board of Canvassers (NBOC) for the tallying of votes for the Senators and party-list representatives, while the COMELEC acts as the NBOC for the tallying of votes for the President and Vice-President.
- _____ 7. Snap elections are held later than the prescribed by the law.
- _____ 8. The Kilusang Bagong Lipunan (KBL) is a faction that broke away from the Nacionalista Party.
- _____ 9. In the 1986 snap elections, the NAMFREL declared Ferdinand Marcos as the winner.
- _____ 10. Election-related violence has been reported to take place during and before the campaign period.

C. Answer the following questions.

- 1. How do the COMELEC and the various election organizations work together to ensure honest elections in the country?

2. How do candidates and voters interact during the campaign period?

3. What are the means by which political parties influence voters during the elections?
Are these means effective?

4. What suggestions can you give in order to address election-related issues in the country?

5. Which aspect of the electoral process needs to be reformed? What reforms will you suggest to improve the electoral process?

ANALYZE

Read the article and answer the questions that follow.

Automated Elections in the Philippines: Issues and Challenges

The implementation of automated elections in the Philippines was a product of decades of planning and gradual reforms in electoral law. Plans for automated elections in the Philippines date back to 1992. In 1997, Congress passed RA 8436 which authorized the COMELEC to use an automated election system in the 1998 elections and in subsequent elections. However, the actual implementation took longer than expected, due to a lack of preparation and delays in coordinating the needed technology and equipment that will enable the system to be implemented nationwide. In 2008, automated elections were first implemented in the ARMM elections and was hailed as a success by the COMELEC. The 2010 national elections was the first instance that the automated election system was implemented nationwide at the local and national levels.

The central feature of automated elections was the introduction of a computerized system where Vote-Counting Machines (VCMs) are used to scan the ballot and record and transmit the election results to online election servers. The use of the VCMs and servers is expected to ensure the accurate counting of votes and the speedy transmission of the results to the various board of canvassers and the COMELEC. The use of a transparency server is a means to prevent electoral fraud since the public is able to access information regarding the vote count so they can compare it with the results from the official COMELEC tabulation. The implementation of automated elections, therefore, would make election results more credible.

Indeed, it has been noted that automation has made the vote-counting stage faster. However, there were still a number of issues regarding the automated system.

For instance, there were reports of VCMs rejecting ballots due to various reasons, such as stray marks on the ballot. In the 2016 elections, this led to the rejection of 2% of the ballots cast, amounting to about 1.14 million votes. In 2013, however, the VCMs rejected ballots because they read the digital lines printed on them as stray votes. Glitches such as these often result in the machines rejecting many authentic ballots, and this led the COMELEC to reprogram and even replace VCMs.

Apart from issues with the scanning of ballots, the VCMs also encountered problems in transmitting the election returns to the election servers. Since the transmission is done wirelessly, it requires a strong signal to maintain a good connection with the servers. During the elections, there were several reports of VCMs experiencing difficulties in transmitting election results due to poor signal and other problems with the telecommunication network. In some cases, the results had to be physically delivered to the board of canvassers for transmission. Other issues in the automated elections include overheating machines, power outages, and non-functional or faulty machines that result in delays at the polls.

Most concerning of the issues raised regarding automated elections is cybersecurity, particularly concerns on the security of data pertaining to the functions of the vote-counting machines, as well as the security of the election servers. During the 2013 elections, concerns were raised regarding the “source code”, which is the program that contains all commands that relate to the function of the machines and servers, as well as the processes utilized in the automated election. Reported errors in the code led to fears that the system may be easily manipulated by unauthorized individuals or groups. The COMELEC, however, assured the public that the errors in the source code have been addressed and that the system is protected from hacking or unauthorized access and modifications. In 2016, the credibility of the automated system was put into question when defeated vice-presidential candidate Bongbong Marcos filed an electoral protest alleging electoral fraud or *dagdag-bawas* in the counting of election returns in the vice-presidential elections. Marcos alleges that the vulnerabilities in the automated election system were not adequately addressed by COMELEC and this was said to be exploited by certain groups to favor his rival, Leni Robredo. Marcos also points to the allegedly unauthorized access of a technician who made changes to the program of the transparency server as proof of irregularities in the vote-counting.

Though automated elections are a promising development in the electoral process in the country, there is still a need to continually monitor and improve the system to address the various issues that the system encounters. Automation, however, is still not a complete solution that will bring about over-all changes in the electoral system. Other electoral problems, such as vote-buying and election-related violence, still exist. COMELEC, however, believes that automation is a step in the right direction toward ensuring honest and credible elections in the country. COMELEC Chairman Andres

Bautista cites that the Philippines has been considered an international model in implementing automated elections, and has served as a model to other countries who wish to implement automated systems in their elections.

SOURCES: 1) "Elections Philippine style, same issues, same problems" <http://bulatlat.com/main/2013/05/10/elections-philippine-style-same-issues-same-problems/>; 2) "Comelec admits more problems in voting system" <http://www.rappler.com/nation/politics/elections/2016/121987-comelec-problems-voting-system-vcm-ccs>; 3) "Errors found in source codes, voting machines" <http://www.philstar.com/headlines/2016/02/11/1551896/errors-found-source-codes-voting-machines>; 4) "Will Automated Elections in the Philippines Increase Public Confidence?" <http://asiafoundation.org/2010/05/05/will-automated-elections-in-the-philippines-increase-public-confidence/>; 5) "A History of Automated Elections in the Philippines" <http://www.filipinaslibrary.org.ph/filipiniana-library/filipiniana/70-features/275-a-history-of-automated-elections-in-the-philippines>; 6) "Bongbong Marcos files protest vs Leni's victory" <http://www.philstar.com/headlines/2016/06/29/1597857/bongbong-marcos-files-protest-vs-lenis-victory>; 7) "Comelec: Let's show the world our elections" <http://www.rappler.com/nation/politics/elections/2016/132382-comelec-show-world-philippine-elections>

Discussion Questions

1. What advantages are expected in the implementation of an automated election system in the Philippines?
2. What are some issues and challenges experienced in the conduct of automated elections?
3. Do you believe that the automated election system has made election results more credible? Explain.
4. What other electoral reforms do you want to be implemented in our country? Describe your intended reform and its expected outcome.

EMPOWER

- A. In groups of five, discuss the importance of clean and honest elections in the Philippines, and the different ways to ensure this. Using the ideas you have discussed as a group, come up with a creative output advocating for the conduct of clean and honest elections in the country. Present your output in class.
- B. Assess your own student elections using the information you have learned about the Philippine electoral process. Suggest ways that would improve the selection of leaders in your school. Discuss also how you as students can become more knowledgeable voters during student elections.

UNIT 4

Active Citizenship and

PROGRESSIVE DEVELOPMENT



LESSON

- 12 Citizenship and Governance
- 13 Participation and Engagement
in Politics and Society
- 14 Civil Society Organizations
and Social Movements

Lesson 12

CITIZENSHIP AND GOVERNANCE

ENGAGE

According to Rizal, citizenship is one of the important characteristics Filipinos must have in order to help the Philippines become a well-developed and fully civilized society. However, to become a responsible citizen, one must be able to define what citizenship means. Citizenship in one sense is an individual's affiliation with a state. However, citizenship also means meeting certain civic demands for the common good. Citizenship requires being considerate about the effects of an action or decision on the rest of society. It also requires concern over the welfare of all of the members of the state. These requirements of citizenship apply to everyone, rich or poor, powerful or not. Of course, an individual might encounter challenges which might affect his or her exercise of citizenship. He or she might think of limiting the exercise of citizenship to communities or social units within his or her reach. He or she might also find difficulty in balancing individual rights with the rights of other citizens. Nonetheless, through initiative and the awareness of the rights entitled to all individuals, it is possible to overcome these challenges, and to exercise citizenship for the benefit of all citizens of the state.

At the end of the lesson, students are expected to answer the following questions:

1. How can one become a Filipino citizen in the legal sense? What requirements must be met in order to attain Filipino citizenship?
2. How is citizenship defined in relation to society? How does this relate to concepts such as nationalism and patriotism?
3. What challenges do Filipinos face in their exercise of citizenship? How have Filipinos addressed these challenges?
4. How can ordinary citizens and government officials exercise citizenship in their daily lives?

DISCUSS

Citizenship as Identity

Citizenship is defined in two ways. The first of these pertains to the constitutional or legal identity of a person; that he or she belongs to a certain state. Citizenship enables the

individual to enjoy certain rights exclusive to the state, such as the right to vote in elections, and the right to work in the country.

According to the 1987 Constitution, there are several ways through which Filipino citizenship can be obtained. The first is **by blood** (*jus sanguinis*) or when at least one of the parents is a Filipino citizen; the second is **by place of birth** (*jus soli*) or when one is born in any part of the Philippines. Individuals who obtain Filipino citizenship through these two ways are referred to as **natural-born** Filipino citizens. Being a natural-born citizen is important for those who would like to become government officials. The Constitution mandates that only natural-born Filipinos may seek public office in all three branches of the national government.

A foreigner may also petition for Filipino citizenship through the process of **naturalization**. A foreign citizen who would like to apply for naturalization must be able to meet the following qualifications:

- 1) he or she must be at least 21 years old by the time of the petition;
- 2) he or she must have lived continuously in the country at least 10 years;
- 3) he or she must believe in the principles set by the Constitution, and must have exhibited good moral character throughout his or her stay in the Philippines;
- 4) he or she must own real estate property which is at least worth ₱5,000; and
- 5) he or she must be able to speak and write in English, Spanish, or any principal Philippine language.

Aside from these qualifications, there are other requirements which an applicant for naturalization must meet. For example, he or she must not be part of a group against organized governments; he or she must also be free from incurable contagious diseases or mental illnesses. If the applicant meets these requirements, he or she can become a naturalized Filipino citizen.

Once an individual acquires Filipino citizenship, he or she does not lose it easily. According to Republic Act No. 9225 or the **Citizenship Retention and Reacquisition Act of 2003**, a person who is Filipino by birth but has become a naturalized citizen of a foreign country may reacquire his or her Filipino citizenship by taking an oath of allegiance to the Philippine Republic. Filipinos who reacquire their citizenship through this law are able to avail of all civil and political rights, as well as responsibilities, provided by Philippine laws. In this sense, dual citizenship is allowed under Philippine law. What is not allowed, however, is dual allegiance – for a Filipino citizen to swear an oath of loyalty to a foreign state and serve in its government. Article IV of the 1987 Constitution explicitly states that dual allegiance is dangerous to the national interest.

It is therefore important for citizens who wish to enter public service that their loyalty to the country should be unquestioned. Thus, the law provides additional requirements for those who intend to run for public office, should they be naturalized citizens of foreign states,

to officially renounce their foreign citizenship. Elected public officials are also required to renounce any oath of allegiance made to foreign states and take an oath of allegiance to the Republic of the Philippines prior to taking office. Also, Filipinos who serve in foreign governments and are in active service in any foreign military are not allowed to vote in the elections or run for public office.

Citizenship as Social Behavior

The second definition of citizenship relates to responsible citizenship. This means that a citizen must possess attitudes and behavior that contribute positively to society. This is said to be the more important characteristic of citizenship, and must be embodied by all citizens comprising the state. Citizenship is not just reinforcing one's identity as a Filipino through outward forms, such as singing the national anthem or reciting the pledge of allegiance. It entails a set of obligations that each citizen must accomplish for the common good. These obligations include following national and local laws, as well as rules set by institutions, such as schools, companies, and organizations. By exercising citizenship, disorder in society is minimized. The exercise of responsible citizenship brings about order, security, and peace in the state.

Citizenship, Nationalism, and Patriotism

Nationalism and patriotism are two concepts which are also often associated with citizenship. **Nationalism** refers to a shared identity among citizens of a state, and a belief in or support of the state. At its extreme, nationalism may refer to the belief that a certain state is superior over the others. Nationalism may take the form of advocacies and social movements. **Patriotism**, meanwhile, is a feeling of attachment, loyalty, or pride to the state, nation, or homeland. Both nationalism and patriotism are often interchangeably used to explain actions that help defend the state and its citizens. Such defense exists in many instances, like in times of war or insurgencies. Nationalism and patriotism can also be expressed by promoting or patronizing the use of locally-manufactured products, or when one expresses support for a fellow citizen or a national sports teams during international competitions.

At its core, citizenship entails a set of values a citizen must uphold in relation to his or her fellow citizens and the state. Nationalism and patriotism, meanwhile, enable the exercise of citizenship through actions that uphold the common good and promote the interests of the state. These three concepts also contribute to positive nation-building, and promote political stability and national progress.

Citizenship in the Current Philippine Setting

Since the Philippines is a democratic state, the needs of the people always are expected to come first. Filipino citizens uphold the welfare of the people through the practice of

nationalism and patriotism. Nonetheless, the exercise of responsible citizenship requires an awareness of various issues and concerns.

Loyalty and Concern for the Common Good

Citizenship entails loyalty to the state. This loyalty can be expressed in various ways, beginning with expressing loyalty to one's family and community. This loyalty then extends to the government and the state. There may be instances, however, where loyalty to one's local community can be a challenge to responsible citizenship.

A citizen may be loyal to his or her family and local community, but may be apathetic or even antagonistic towards the needs of those outside his or her community. A Tagalog for example, may not be necessarily sympathetic to the needs of a Cebuano or an Ilocano; or a citizen who grew up in an urban community might not necessarily identify with citizens from the rural communities.

However, there have also been instances when Filipinos have shown concern towards the welfare of one another, despite coming from different local communities. For example, in 2013, schools and other organizations in Metro Manila gave donations to those who were affected by super typhoon Yolanda. These victims were mostly from Leyte and other provinces in Eastern Visayas. Then, in 2015 and 2016, the events *Kampuhan sa Diliman* and *Lakbayan ng Pambansang Minorya* served as avenues for students and other citizens from Metro Manila to personally talk to indigenous peoples from all over the country about their concerns for their ancestral lands, as well as violence and imperialism.

The expression of loyalty to the country and concern for fellow Filipinos is also a concern of Filipinos overseas. For instance, Filipino communities in foreign countries are characterized by a strong sense of identity and solidarity. These communities often spearhead projects that continually reinforce Filipino identity and promote their various interests. The internet and social media sites are also useful tools that enable citizens outside the Philippines to be informed about news and developments in the country. Likewise, those in the Philippines also use the internet and social media to be informed of relevant regional and global events. One instance that shows the power of communication in advocating citizenship is the case of Mary Jane Veloso, an overseas Filipino worker who was involved in a case of drug smuggling in Indonesia and was sentenced to death. Knowledge of her plight was the focus of media and social media attention, and this mobilized Filipinos within and outside the country to call on the government to take action and save Mary Jane. Because of the concerted efforts of citizens, the Philippine government took action and was able to negotiate a reprieve for Mary Jane Veloso.

The expression of loyalty is based on a regard for the common good. Upholding the common good, however, requires citizens to sacrifice certain individual and communal interests in recognition of larger issues and concerns. Therefore, one's loyalty to the community must not be a hindrance to upholding national policies and programs. This is a challenge to both

citizens and public officials, since they often have to set aside certain local interests in favor of national concerns.

Balancing Individualism and Collectivism

Individualism is the belief that the rights or benefits of a single person should come first. On the other hand, collectivism states that it is the interests of a group as a whole that must be prioritized. For democratic states such as the Philippines, it has often been a challenge to exercise citizenship which balances both individualism and collectivism. Individual citizens are provided the right to exercise their freedoms in different aspects. At the same time, however, other citizens must not be harmed with an individual's exercise of his or her freedom.

Effective and responsible citizenship is achieved through a balance between individualism and collectivism. Public officials may be granted the authority to use the powers of government, but should they step out of line and abuse their authority, citizens are empowered to assert their sovereignty and demand that these officials be held accountable. One significant example of individualism and collectivism in action is in the conduct of protests and other mass actions. Citizens of a collective mindset believe that it is their duty to participate in protests since their actions contribute to disseminating awareness of important issues and demand that the government take action. Citizens of an individualist mindset, on the other hand, would consider mass actions as a nuisance as it disrupts their normal activities.

Citizens are encouraged to adopt a collective mindset as it encourages greater political participation. Nation building is one means by which the government encourages its citizens to look beyond their personal interests and begin to consider the greater problems and issues affecting the state. Responsible citizenship encourages us to go beyond our individual or personal concerns and take on greater responsibilities and challenges as citizens of the state.

Practicing Citizenship in Everyday Life

There are various ways to practice citizenship in different daily activities, as well as in the government. For instance, when taking public transportation, it is important that commuters embark and disembark at properly designated areas. It is also necessary that drivers of all kinds of vehicles slow down for pedestrians crossing the streets. Through these simple measures, accidents can be avoided and the safety of the citizenry is secured. In addition, preserving the cleanliness of public areas also helps protect the health of the citizens.

Private individuals can also practice citizenship through participation in activities organized by the local government, such as clean-up drives, leadership seminars, and outreach programs. Through such activities, a citizen is able to directly contribute to the development of his or her community.

Meanwhile, public officials are perhaps expected the most to exhibit the qualities of a responsible citizen. This is because they are the forces and minds behind the laws that are followed by all members of the state. In order to accomplish this duty, it is important that public officials exercise transparency and accountability in every action and decision they take. Furthermore, it is a must that they perform their duties without expecting unnecessary favors, bribes or payment from others.

Through all of the acts enumerated above, one can display the essence of citizenship – one’s concern for his or her fellow citizens and the good of all members of the state.

RECALL

- Citizenship is defined in two ways, the first of which is the legal or constitutional identity of a person. In this sense, there are two kinds of citizens recognized by the Philippine Constitution: the natural-born and the naturalized Filipino citizens. Naturalized Filipinos are those foreign citizens who have applied for Filipino citizenship by meeting a set of requirements and undergoing a legal process. Meanwhile, a Filipino who becomes a naturalized foreign citizen may reacquire his or her Filipino citizenship, as stated by the Citizenship Retention and Reacquisition Act of 2003.
- The second definition of citizenship involves displaying behavior and a disposition which shall contribute to the common good of society. It is different from nationalism and patriotism in that it does not necessarily require the outright expression of political beliefs or social movements. However, all three concepts are needed to be embodied by all citizens in order to contribute to positive nation-building.
- In the Philippine setting, there have been challenges to the exercise of citizenship. These are the localization of loyalty and the need to balance individual and collective needs. In recent years, Filipinos have attempted to address these challenges and have shown their concern towards the common good of their fellow citizens.
- Individuals may exercise citizenship even in simple ways and daily activities. By considering the effects of one’s action on the lives of other people, one can exercise citizenship at its core – contributing to the common good of the members of the Philippine state.

EXAMINE

A. Identify the following.

- _____ 1. This is both defined as the legal identity of an individual and his or her responsibility to accomplish certain obligations as a member of the state.
- _____ 2. These are individuals who obtain Filipino citizenship by blood or by place of birth.
- _____ 3. This is the process through which foreigners may attain Filipino citizenship.
- _____ 4. This law recognizes that natural-born Filipinos still retain citizenship despite being naturalized citizens of foreign countries.
- _____ 5. This refers to a shared identity among citizens of a state, and a belief in or support of the state.

B. Write T if the statement is true; write F if the statement is false.

- _____ 1. Legal citizenship enables an individual to access certain rights exclusive to the state, such as the right to vote in elections, and the right to work inside the country.
- _____ 2. The Constitution allows naturalized Filipinos to seek public office in the national government.
- _____ 3. Applicants for naturalization in the Philippines must be at least 18 years old by the time of the petition.
- _____ 4. While a person may be a Filipino by birth, he may renounce his or her Filipino citizenship by becoming a naturalized citizen in a foreign country.
- _____ 5. The Constitution allows Filipinos to have both dual citizenship and dual allegiance.

C. Answer the following questions.

1. How is citizenship defined by Philippine law?

2. Why is it important for the state to allow natural-born Filipinos to reacquire their Filipino citizenship?

3. What are the ways that you can exercise responsible citizenship in your community?

ANALYZE

Read the selection and answer the discussion questions that follow.

Social Media And Citizenship

The advent of social media is one of the most significant technological phenomena which have affected how we exercise our citizenship. Social media encompasses all forms of electronic communication which enable individuals to connect and exchange ideas and information with one another. A well-known form of social media is social networking sites, which include Facebook, Twitter, and Instagram, among others. These websites have become a significant part of our everyday lives, and they have also affected the way we participate in our nation's affairs. In fact, it is common to hear and use the term “netizen” to refer to social media users. Social media has had an impact on the way we exercise our citizenship and our right to be involved in our nation's political concerns. For one, social networking sites have made sharing information much faster. News about political issues, public officials, and the government are now publicized in a matter of a “post” or “retweet.” Reacting to political and national issues has also become easier. With the new “react” feature of Facebook, for instance, one may choose to not only “like” a post, but also to express anger, sadness, or surprise about it. Netizens may choose to take this further, and publish information showing their reaction towards a certain political issue, to which others can provide comments. These comments serve as an avenue for political discourse among social media users. Lastly, social networking sites can be a way for citizens to lobby for political causes – this may be through netizens sharing posts or information from their fellow users, or even through online petitions. Social media users may virtually “sign” these petitions in support of a specific cause, and share it afterwards to the rest of the online community.

Filipinos are said to be some of the most active citizens in social media. In fact, according to the 2015 report of the global agency We Are Social, there are about 47 million active Facebook users in the country. This extensive presence in social media can be said to mirror the increasing involvement of Filipinos in political affairs. For instance, for the 2016 national and local elections, issues involving the presidential candidates circulated in social media sites. Netizens used social media to either defend or criticize the candidates involved in these issues. The vice presidential debates also became a trending topic, and incorporated questions from social media users. In addition, Filipinos have also used social media to support the enactment of proposed laws such as the Mental Health Act and the Freedom of Information (FOI) Bill.

In spite of the usefulness of social media in exercising citizenship, there are still issues that Filipinos and other netizens encounter in making sure that the common good is being put first. One notable example is the prevalence of personal attacks

towards certain personalities or social media users. Aside from this, the supposed use of “disreputable” sources and proliferation of “misinformed” posts are also seen as issues which threaten political awareness and responsible citizen participation.

Nonetheless, it is still believed that social media has helped citizens exercise democracy in another way. Social media is also believed to help citizens become even more politically active than ever. Citizens now have more ways through which they can assess the government and the performance of public officials. At the same time, however, citizens have to make sure that what they do in the Internet does not threaten the common good and the rights of their fellowmen.

SOURCES: 1) “Social Media: A Game Changer in Philippine Elections” <http://asiafoundation.org/2016/04/27/social-media-a-game-changer-in-philippine-elections/>; 2) “A profile of Internet users in the Philippines” <http://www.rappler.com/brandrap/profile-internet-users-ph>

Discussion questions

1. How do social media sites influence the way an individual exercises his or her citizenship?
2. How have Filipinos utilized social media in practicing their citizenship and participating in national affairs?
3. What issues do Filipinos and other netizens encounter in using social media as a tool for practicing citizenship? How can these issues be addressed?
4. Have you personally used social media to support or forward political causes? Describe how and why you did so.
5. Is social media an effective way to exercise citizenship? Support your answer.

EMPOWER

- A. Form groups of five members and prepare a presentation which will highlight the importance of exercising citizenship. This may be an infomercial, a short role play, or talk-show type presentation.**
- B. Organize a short seminar on the importance of citizenship and how the youth can become responsible citizens of the community. Coordinate with barangay officials and Sangguniang Kabataan (SK) officers in your community in planning and conducting the seminar.**
- C. Organize a tree-planting or clean-up drive activity in your community. Coordinate with your local barangay officials in order to do this. Make a portfolio that will document your activities throughout the conduct of the project. Write a reflection paper on how the activity helped you exercise citizenship.**

Lesson 13

PARTICIPATION AND ENGAGEMENT IN POLITICS AND SOCIETY

ENGAGE

Active participation in the government is another component of citizenship. This can be done through various means such as responsible voting and combatting corruption, promoting women and youth empowerment, and environmental awareness and action. In upholding their responsibilities and duties, citizens must strive to develop skills and values that will enable them to engage effectively in government policies and programs, and contribute to upholding the democratic ideals of the state. It is through active involvement in government that citizens are able to take part in the development of society and bring about positive changes for the country.

One must do his or her part in contributing to the improvement of society. It is easy to condemn or criticize corrupt, inept, and incompetent public officials. However, we should also lay down concrete actions to eliminate corruption and ineptitude in government. This is the challenge of citizenship: the need to actively participate and engage in political, economic, social, and cultural affairs.

At the end of the lesson, students are expected to answer the following questions:

1. How do citizen participation and political engagement contribute to good governance?
2. What skills and values help citizens in participating effectively in governance?
3. How can citizens contribute to the improvement of government services?
4. What are the ways by which citizens can bring about positive change in society?
5. What current issues and challenges can be readily addressed by citizens in their respective communities?

DISCUSS

Political Engagement and Participation

Citizenship entails the responsibility of participation. **Political participation** gives meaning to the rights and responsibilities of citizens and is the cornerstone of democracy.

Various views consider political participation in different ways. One view considers political participation as being primarily expressed through citizens choosing government officials and influencing government action. Other views have a more expansive notion of political participation, such as involving citizens in making and implementing public policy through individual and collective actions. These actions include campaigning, establishing contact with groups and institutions, mass action, and protests. Political participation is then further enhanced through voter education, awareness of citizen rights and responsibilities, lobbying, and advocacies. These are all aimed toward the development of more informed and empowered citizens.

Education and Awareness of Issues

The basic form of participation for citizens who do not yet belong to the voting age is education and awareness of issues. Education is by itself a right and a duty of every citizen. It provides opportunities for citizens to become knowledgeable about their government and society; have an awareness of the prevailing conditions that affect them; and discuss important issues that relate to governance.

In addition, education provides citizens the necessary skills to engage in more meaningful participation in government and become more productive, informed, and discerning citizens. Education helps them use their talents and abilities to uphold their personal welfare, as well as address the needs of their community and country.

Awareness of issues means knowing the basic facts related to them and weighing opinions on them. Engaging in discussions and having a balanced view of issues helps citizens clarify their personal views on them. Views based on accurate and balanced information help citizens decide on the proper course of action, thus enabling them to engage with the government more effectively and contribute to addressing the issues and problems that affect the country.

Critical Analysis of Views and Opinions

Political discussions often expose citizens to issues which involve varied interests and ideologies. It is important for citizens to be able to effectively evaluate the views they encounter as they engage in political discussions and debates. A critical analysis of views requires examining facts and claims to determine their truthfulness or validity. Arguments should also be analyzed to ensure that they are balanced and reasonable. Opposing views should be considered and examined; their strong points should be acknowledged while their weak points should be improved. Then, it is up to the citizen to identify which side is more credible, or to formulate a more objective view regarding a particular issue.

Awareness of Rights and Responsibilities

Citizenship entails the enjoyment of certain rights and privileges, as well as the recognition of certain responsibilities. The government has instituted and enshrined various rights that must be enjoyed by all citizens. Citizens must be aware of their rights and their responsibility to promote and uphold them at home, in their respective communities, and in the government. Since we live in a democratic society, we must practice and promote democratic ideals, and engage in practices that embody them. These ideals and practices include:

1. willingness to defend one's rights;
2. independent thinking;
3. initiative;
4. empathy;
5. the willingness to consider other people's thoughts and views;
6. careful decision-making; and
7. respect and consideration towards others.

It is important to remember that rights and responsibilities go hand-in-hand. Citizens cannot expect to enjoy their rights if they are unwilling to fulfill their responsibilities as well. Among the main responsibilities of citizens are the following:

1. uphold and defend the ideals of the state, particularly the Philippine Constitution;
2. express and uphold loyalty to the state, its government, and its people;
3. obey all laws and ordinances in the state and its local communities;
4. pay taxes promptly and correctly;
5. respect the life and dignity of others;
6. participate actively in public affairs and contribute to good governance; and
7. continually uphold and practice democratic ideals.

Awareness of rights and responsibilities enables citizens to identify and address instances of misuse and abuse of rights, as well as define the means by which they can engage with the government and help achieve its goals.

Active Participation in Political Causes

Apart from engaging in political discussions, citizens can actively participate in politics and governance through concrete actions. One of these is **advocacies**, which refer to activities undertaken by individuals and groups that promote a certain cause, in order to influence the decisions of the government regarding social, economic, and political issues. **Lobbying**, meanwhile, is the political action where citizens and groups directly engage with legislators in an attempt to influence policy-making.

Engaging in advocacies enables citizens to organize themselves, make themselves be heard, and ensure that their respective rights and privileges are protected. Advocacies encompass varied issues and may be implemented in the community, local, or national level. Engaging in advocacies leads to the formation of **interest groups**, which are associations that promote certain causes. Advocacies may also lead to the formation of ideologies among like-minded individuals, which could lead them to more significant political participation through political campaigns, or even by running for public office.

A more militant means of engaging in political causes is through mass action or protest. **Mass action** refers to the collective behavior of large groups of people that may or may not require planning or coordination among its participants. **Social action**, meanwhile, refers to mass actions that are directed towards a specific goal. Political activities are often characterized by mass and social actions. Rallies, demonstrations, and protests, for example, involve large numbers of people gathering in support of a political cause. People may engage in non-violent types of protest such as marches, boycotts, labor strikes, hunger strikes, sit-ins, and civil disobedience. Most political demonstrations are peaceful in nature, although there may be instances where non-violent protests may become violent. Our government guarantees the right of citizens to engage in peaceful protest actions. It also recognizes that mass action is one legitimate means by which citizens are able to voice out their concerns and views, and compel the government to take appropriate action.

Responsible Voting

Voting, or the exercise of suffrage, is the basic and most common act of political participation. The right to choose the country's leaders and government officials requires citizens to make careful and informed decisions, and to determine the possible effects of their choices not only on their personal lives, but also on their communities and the nation in general.

It is the responsibility of voters to be informed about their rights so that they will be able to effectively exercise suffrage. They must be aware of prevailing social and political issues so that they can evaluate the specific platforms of political candidates. Voters must also have a sense of ideology and determine their own personal political beliefs. This set of beliefs will then serve as a gauge by which they will be able to compare the particular views, beliefs, and sentiments of political candidates. Voters must only elect candidates who embody and uphold democratic ideals, and whose plan of action or platform is the most attainable and beneficial to the state. One suggested means to determine the "perfect candidate" during elections is scrutinizing his or her background and track record. The candidate must have a clean record of service either in the private or public sector. He or she must possess the required experience and must exhibit administrative capability. Citizens must also keep themselves informed of issues and developments during the campaign period by watching the news and attending political debates and forums. This will serve as an additional means

for voters to evaluate candidates and determine who will be most effective as the leader of the country.

Once citizens have determined their chosen candidates, their participation is not limited to casting their votes for them. They may choose to participate in the political campaign of their favored candidates as a means to promote their ideals and ensure their victory in the elections. An active campaign is necessary in order to disseminate information regarding candidates and political parties to the voting population, and engage citizens in a discussion on their platforms. This will allow all citizens to have as much information as they need to evaluate their choices and make the proper choice on election day.

Even after the elections, citizens must continually engage and maintain contact with public officials. Public office is a public trust; thus, citizens must continually monitor the elected officials to ensure that they keep their campaign promises and continue to uphold democratic values and principles while in office. Citizens may directly communicate with public officials to inform them of issues that need immediate attention, or to convey their opinions on pressing social and political problems. Constant communication and contact between public officials and their constituents will ensure that policies, programs, and services reach the citizens and remain relevant to their needs. This also ensures accountability of public officials to the people, as well as honesty and transparency in governance.

Combating Graft and Corruption

The problem of graft and corruption seems to be entrenched in Philippine governance. Graft and corruption have a significant effect on public services and infrastructure, as the misuse of funds often results in substandard infrastructure and services, which have detrimental effects on citizens. Eliminating government corruption, therefore, will result in economic gains as resources become more efficiently utilized and maximized to improve government services. As citizens, we must take steps to continually call on our government to address corruption and ensure that all public funds are utilized for the welfare of the people.

Various citizen groups continually campaign for cleanliness and transparency in the government. They petition the government to release information on the financial records of government projects to ensure transparency in its transactions. Technology has also given new tools for citizens to keep track of government projects, ensure transparency, and call attention to illegal acts and corrupt practices in public offices. In addition, media outlets monitor and comment on government activities. Media is considered an important counterbalance to the powers of government as the information it provides through news and commentaries encourages public officials and citizens to act on incompetence, inaction, and corruption in the government.

The fight against corruption begins at home. It then extends to the schools and the community, and later encompasses larger institutions such as the government. In combating

corruption, the basic values that should be nurtured in each citizen are honesty and integrity. These are expressed in telling the truth and returning an item belonging to someone else, for instance. If the temptation of covetousness is overcome in simple ways, then overcoming corruption also becomes possible in more complicated conditions and larger institutions such as the government. Implementing grassroots-level movements, such as awareness campaigns within the schools, will contribute to developing a mentality of honesty among the youth. Likewise, parents, elders, family members, teachers, and other adults should be examples of good governance and honest behavior at home, in school, and in the community. Nurturing school and classroom honesty and transparency trains and educates individuals in the practice of clean and sound governance.

Nevertheless, the primary institution that can decisively bring about the end of corruption is the government itself. This is done through the formulation and implementation of laws that address corrupt practices and abuse of power. The following are some recommendations of the World Bank regarding the most effective means by which governments can combat corruption:

1. **Pay civil servants well.** Adequate and fair compensation must be given to public workers in order to motivate them and discourage illegal behavior such as bribery.
2. **Promote transparency and openness in government spending.** Effective budget planning and control should be implemented in public offices, and transparency in transactions and processes must be exercised to ensure that resources are used effectively and efficiently.
3. **Cut red tape.** Bureaucratic red tape must be eliminated in order to combat corruption and ensure that only essential processes and requirements are maintained in government transactions.
4. **Replace regressive and distorting subsidies with targeted cash transfers.** The government must be responsible in giving out financial aid to institutions and businesses to ensure that the money given is used properly.
5. **Establish international conventions on eliminating corruption.** An international legal framework must be established as part of the global effort to eliminate corruption; this becomes the basis for national policies and programs that target corruption prevalent in specific countries.
6. **Deploy smart technology.** Utilize communication technology and other innovations to maintain constant and close communication between citizens and the government, as well as to ensure transparency in transactions.

The eventual elimination of corruption in governance requires a concerted effort between the government and its citizens, which will lead to changes that will gradually reform the prevailing political culture, and reorient public officials toward honest and transparent public service.

Engaging Significant Political Causes

Empowering Various Sectors of Society

The empowerment of citizens is another example of political participation. **Empowerment** is the act of granting citizens the authority to address the problems they face, make sure that their rights are being respected, and participate in government affairs. In the Philippines, the government empowers its citizens through creating policies and programs that respond to the needs of various sectors of society. The representation of various political and social sectors is also enabled in the government. This is most evident in the inclusion of party-list representatives in Congress. They are meant to represent the different sectors of society, including the labor groups, the urban poor, and the education sector, among others.

The legislative bodies of local government units also include sectoral representatives from women, agricultural or industrial workers, and other sectors such as the urban poor, indigenous communities, and persons with disabilities (PWDs). Barangay governments also have their own Sangguniang Kabataan units, which aim to provide an avenue for the youth to take part in projects in the community. Meanwhile, the ARMM regional government has an executive council whose Deputy Governors represent the Muslims, Christians, and other indigenous communities in the region. In addition, it also has other offices focused on improving the lives of youth and women. These offices are the Coordinating and Development on Bangsamoro Youth Affairs and the Regional Commission on Bangsamoro Women.

Although the various sectors of society are represented and considered in public offices, there are still those who face challenges to their empowerment. Through actions taken by the government and other groups, these sectors are given the opportunity to overcome these challenges and exercise their right to be empowered.

Empowering Women and the Youth

Women are one sector which still faces several challenges to their empowerment, one of which is domestic violence. According to the Philippine National Police, cases of domestic violence against women have steadily increased from 6,271 cases in 2004, to 23,865 in 2013. Women are also found to have a lower rate of participation in the labor force. According to the 2013 report of the International Labor Organization (ILO), there is a 25.9 percent gender gap ratio between men and women in labor participation. In order to address these issues and other challenges faced by the women sector, the Philippine Commission on Women (PCW) was formed. The PCW was established to provide counsel to the Office of the President in formulating and implementing projects that uphold the rights of women and to guarantee gender equality, as well as to allow women participate in policymaking in the government. In 2009, the Magna Carta for Women was enacted, which protects the rights of women and mandates the increased participation of women in the government, as well as in the police force. In addition, the Department of Trade and Industry (DTI) has worked to

provide livelihood projects for women. In 2015, for instance, the DTI collaborated with the Department of Agrarian Reform (DAR) to establish accessory-making businesses for women in Kidapawan City.

The youth is another sector whose empowerment has been challenged by several issues throughout the decades. One of these challenges is the increasing rate of school dropouts. According to the Department of Education, the rate of school dropouts in both the elementary and secondary levels has consistently increased from school year 2007-2008 to 2011-2012. Unemployment has also been a challenge to youth empowerment. In the 2016 report of the Philippine Statistics Authority, 48.2 percent of the unemployed population comes from the 18-24 age group. Lastly, the Department of Labor and Employment has reported in 2011 that about 5.5 million children are already working; among these, about three million children (or 54.5 percent) are found to be subjected to hazardous conditions. The National Youth Commission (NYC) was established in 1995 as an agency aiming to respond to these challenges. In 2014, the NYC collaborated with the Department of Social Welfare and Development (DSWD) to implement the Government Internship Program (GIP). More than providing hands-on exposure to government work, the GIP also enables out-of-school and in-school youths to gain income. Children International, a private humanitarian organization, offers the HOPE (Helping Overcome Poverty through Education) scholarship in order to help underprivileged but deserving youths attain education. In 2015, the Inter-Agency Council Against Trafficking (IACAT), headed by the secretaries of Justice and Social Welfare and Development, created regional task forces to help enforce laws against child labor. A memorandum on the Rescue and Rehabilitation of Abused Domestic Workers was also signed last year, which is expected to provide assistance to domestic workers experiencing abuse, including children.

Persons with Disabilities and Indigenous Peoples

Aside from women and the youth, two other sectors which have encountered challenges to their empowerment are the persons with disabilities (PWDs) and the indigenous peoples (IPs). According to the National Economic Development Authority, the PWDs remain among the poorest of the poor due to lack of opportunities for education and training catering to their conditions. In a 2010 research from the Philippine Institute for Development Studies, it was found that PWDs who are not members of Disability Self-Help Organizations (DHSOs) are likely to be economically inactive. Furthermore, in a 2009 study from the same organization, it was found that 40.9 percent of its research respondents relied on self-generated jobs to gain income. The same study also revealed that although PWDs are literate, most of them still lack the necessary assistive devices for reading and writing, such as Braille boards and hearing aids. The government has attempted to address these issues through promulgating the Magna Carta for Disabled Persons. The Magna Carta is intended to help the PWDs gain more access to assistive facilities, as well as to grant this sector the power to take part in formulating government projects that will benefit them. The National Council on Disability Affairs (NCDA) was also established to

ensure that the provisions of the Magna Carta are followed. In Makati City, PWDs have recently been employed in the city government, and have been offered livelihood trainings and advance courses in information technology.

Meanwhile, indigenous peoples (IPs) have often been subject to abuses such as military violence. According to data from the non-governmental organization Human Rights Watch, at least 25 leaders and members of indigenous communities have been killed in Bukidnon and Surigao del Sur during the first eight months of 2015 alone. The strong presence of military forces in Mindanao has also subjected the indigenous peoples to displacement. The United Nations High Commissioner for Refugees reports that 6,263 members of indigenous communities in different regions in Mindanao have been displaced from January to June 2015. Poverty is also an issue that confronts indigenous communities. In the 2015 data from the Philippine Statistics Authority, some of the provinces in the country with the highest poverty incidence rates are those which are also heavily populated by indigenous peoples, such as Lanao del Sur (67.3 percent poverty rate), Apayao (54.7 percent), and Sarangani (46 percent). Apart from poverty and violence, however, one of the most notable issues confronting the indigenous communities is the violation of their rights to their ancestral lands. It is believed that these ancestral lands are being sold to foreign corporations without the consent of the indigenous communities. To respond to all of these challenges and to empower the indigenous communities, the government enacted the Indigenous Peoples Rights Act (IPRA) in 1997. The IPRA grants the indigenous communities the power over their ancestral properties and their right to self-determination. In addition, the National Commission for Culture and the Arts held the *Dayaw* Festival in 2015. This was an event where the indigenous groups all over the country convened to discuss the issues which they face, and to come up with solutions to address these challenges.

Citizens' Role in Empowering the Various Sectors of Society

We as citizens can also directly participate in government programs that address the various problems that these sectors face and threaten their empowerment. Moreover, we can also engage with organizations that work to solve social problems and address the needs of these sectors. Information dissemination and advocacy is another effective means to raise awareness about the plight of these sectors, and this is made easier through social media and other forms of communication technology. Technology offers a means for advocates to organize themselves, coordinate their actions and projects, and engage with other organizations and institutions that can help them contribute to the protection of the rights of their fellow citizens.

Environmental Awareness and Action

Environmental issues nowadays are among the most crucial social and political issues that need attention. Humanity's rampant use and misuse of natural resources have given

rise to various environmental challenges, such as climate change and global warming. These challenges are especially evident in the environment disasters which we have experienced as we progress into the 21st century. Stronger typhoons, massive floods, more devastating earthquakes, widespread drought, and many other calamities are now commonly experienced in all countries.

Citizenship can be practiced actively to protect, sustain, and restore the environment. The most basic individual actions that a citizen can perform in order to minimize damage to the environment are responsible waste disposal and waste segregation. Proper waste disposal refers to throwing waste in the correct garbage bins or receptacles. Waste segregation, on the other hand, renders them more beneficial. Biodegradable waste can be collected in compost pits to turn it into a source of fertilizer and even fuel. Non-biodegradable waste, on the other hand, can yield recyclable materials that may still be used for other purposes. Segregation of wastes also helps in the responsible disposal of materials such as plastic, batteries, and hazardous materials and substances. These materials may cause greater environmental damage if they are not disposed of properly.

Apart from responsible waste management, citizens can also implement energy-saving measures at home and in their communities. The high cost of energy consumption often translates to greater consumption of oil and coal, which are the primary fuels used in generating power in power plants. The burning of these fuels releases greenhouse gases into the atmosphere which, in turn, further contributes to global warming. Minimizing energy consumption and using alternative energy sources is seen as one means by which countries can cut back on coal consumption and help in the reduction of gas emissions. Meanwhile, practical measures that can be implemented by citizens include minimizing the use of vehicles; using energy-saving light bulbs and appliances at home; and turning off lights and appliances at certain times. Citizens can also work towards the development of sustainable energy sources in the country. One example of a sustainable energy project is the Bangui Windfarm in Ilocos Norte, whose wind turbines generate about 50% of the energy for the province, and is currently being further developed to increase its energy production within the next few years.

RECALL

- Public participation and engagement in political processes is the civic responsibility of each citizen.
- Responsible voting is one example of participation and engagement in politics.
- Knowing and discussing issues in politics helps citizens evaluate the government and exercise their rights as political participants to the fullest.
- Sustained public scrutiny of government officials can bring about transparency and order in the government.
- Graft and corruption can be minimized through actively and vigilantly campaigning for honesty, transparency, and accountability of public officials.
- Broadcast and social media can be utilized by citizens to participate in the continuous and sustained campaign for honesty, transparency, and accountability in the government.
- Women empowerment is about addressing and eliminating crimes and violence against women, and upholding their dignity as members of society. It is also a way to encourage women to further develop as leaders and achievers in society.
- Youth empowerment is about giving opportunities for the youth to participate actively in politics, economics, society, culture, and religion. Empowerment creates more opportunities for young people to obtain complete and proper education, as well as employment.
- Persons with disabilities (PWDs) can be further empowered by providing them with the assistive devices and facilities they need, as well as opportunities to have a greater participation in the labor force.
- Empowerment of indigenous peoples (IPs) entails respect for their right to their ancestral lands and preservation of their cultures. It also means protecting them from threats of violence and displacement, and helping them combat poverty.
- Environmental consciousness is a practice of responsible citizenship through upholding environmental sustainability and restoration as a common good.

EXAMINE

A. Write a check (✓) in the blanks before the statements that indicate positive citizen participation in governance.

- _____ 1. A group of student activists participated in a peaceful protest action calling on the government to uphold human rights and due process in the campaign against drug trade in the country.
- _____ 2. An online blogger decided to spread unsubstantiated rumors regarding possible terrorist plots in the country.
- _____ 3. A celebrity decided to support the government initiative to fight poverty by volunteering to speak about issues related to poverty in the country.
- _____ 4. Online commenters began spreading black propaganda against a politician who is deemed to be a political opponent of the President.
- _____ 5. A concerned citizen contacted a government hotline to report an incident of bribery in the Mayor's Office.
- _____ 6. Students spent their weekend helping pack relief goods for communities affected by the typhoon.
- _____ 7. A crowd of onlookers chased down a snatcher and beat him up before the police arrived and arrested him.
- _____ 8. First-time voters began following the developments during the campaign period very closely, paying close attention to the platforms of the candidates and their parties.
- _____ 9. Participants in an online forum engaged in a respectful discussion on the positive and negative outcomes of the initial programs of the Duterte administration.
- _____ 10. A journalist knowingly ignored evidence that acquits a police officer suspected of torturing a suspect and continued to give commentaries that insist on the officer's guilt.

B. Answer the following questions.

1. What skills or values should citizens develop to enable them to participate effectively in governance?

2. How can governments benefit from having active and responsible citizens?

3. Why should the government also pay attention to the needs of certain sectors of society?

4. What programs and policies are undertaken by the government to address social concerns? Identify one program or policy implemented by the government and discuss it.

5. How can the government and citizens work together to address climate change and other environmental concerns?

ANALYZE

Form a group of five members. Read the selection and answer the discussion questions that follow.

THE PHILIPPINE RESPONSE TO CLIMATE CHANGE

by Hon. Ramon J.P. Paje, Secretary, Department of Environment and Natural Resources

Keynote address delivered during the Muslim Association for Climate Change Action (MACCA) Roundtable Discussion, held on Sept. 7, 2010, at Imperial Palace Suites, Quezon City, Philippines.

General Information About Climate Change

I believe that you need not be told of what climate change is all about; being scientists and environmentalists, seeking knowledge about climate change has been your ‘cup of tea’. Nevertheless, for the sake of advocacy, let me share with you

some general information on phenomenal occurrences in our country related to the effects of global warming, with the hope of providing you a trigger in your succeeding discussions.

Though the Philippines is contributing less to greenhouse gas emissions, our country has still shown vulnerability to disasters and the impacts of climate change. Climate data for the past 50 years already show trends of rising temperatures by about 0.011°C annually; changes in the rainfall pattern; and increasing number of extreme climate events like cyclones, flooding, and drought. Independent studies and the climate modeling of the Philippine Atmospheric, Geophysical and Astronomical Services Administration (PAGASA) projects the following climate changes in 2020 and 2050:

- The country's mean annual temperatures may rise by about 0.9°C to 1.4°C by 2020 and 1.7°C to 2.4°C by 2050;
- The dry season of March-May will become drier, and the wet season of July-August and September-November will become wetter with time;
- Rainfall in most areas in Mindanao is expected to be reduced for all seasons by 2050; and
- A stronger southwest monsoon season is projected as seen in the significant increases in rainfall in June-August.

Based on the findings, the future of Philippine environment may indeed be “Armageddon-like.” That is why the development of a response framework and action plan on climate change is critically important, to which this roundtable discussion of yours is of much significance.

The Government's Response

National efforts have proven that we are in the right track in combating the effects and impacts of climate change. Strong and responsible political will has been expressed through the passage of the Climate Change Act, and very fresh to public knowledge is the signing of the National Framework Strategy on Climate Change (NFSCC) under the masterful oversight of the Climate Change Commission. Moreover, the Philippine Strategy on Climate Change Adaptation (PSCCA) was also recently launched.

Under the leadership of Pres. Noynoy Aquino, this government stands four-square in its commitment to the NFSCC, which gives importance to adaptation. The International Panel on Climate Change (IPCC) defines adaptation as any adjustment in natural or human systems in response to actual or expected climatic stimuli or their effects, towards minimizing harm towards the environment. Scientific studies suggest that even if the world makes a significant reduction in greenhouse gas emissions,

the observable lag in the events in the climate system means that the world is still faced with decades of climate change due to the emissions already put into the atmosphere. The Philippines is not a major emitter of greenhouse gases; in fact, it is a carbon sink, or an area capable of absorbing carbon dioxide from the atmosphere. Still, the adverse effects of global climate changes will affect the country. Adaptation is, therefore, a necessary complement to measures that reduce greenhouse gas emissions. Adaptation is a mechanism to manage risks, adjust economic activity to reduce vulnerability, and to improve financial stability.

The PSSCA provides information on climate parameters and most probable scenarios based on scientific consensus and the official baseline adopted by the government on climate change. This includes the following:

- Assessment of the country's vulnerability to climate change and adaptive capacity;
- Assessment of the potential impacts of climate change on the key sectors (water, biodiversity, forestry, coastal and marine, fisheries, agriculture, health, energy and infrastructure), whether positive or negative, and direct or indirect;
- National development goals and priorities relevant to the environment; and
- A multi-sector consultation process.

Meanwhile, efforts related to mitigation is in the offing, with our country taking part in the discussion about REDD+ and signifying strong interest to implement it. REDD+ is a broad term that describes a range of actions to reduce emissions from deforestation and forest degradation, and to enhance forest carbon stocks in developing countries, supported by financing from industrialized nations. As the global initiative on REDD+ has come to the forefront of international climate change mitigation policy, opportunities for pilot projects have emerged across Southeast Asia, including in the Philippines. The Philippines offers an enabling environment for REDD+ development—a strong research community and national capacity to engage with forestry projects; a relatively decentralized natural resource management capable of instituting local-level REDD+ projects; policies and frameworks which are rights-based and aimed at environmental and social progress; a robust civil society capable of supporting REDD+ development and implementation at multiple scales; and significant opportunities to generate co-benefits.

Current And Future Challenges

With our nation bracing for the effects and impacts of climate change, the stakes and challenges are great and continuing. If there is a sector to which these challenges are to be significantly hurled, it is the community of scientists and environmentalists, both government and private. Yes, the science community has

spoken about the impacts of climate change and global warming, but many plans are still left unaccomplished.

On the aspect of adaptation, the following are still the known gaps:

- The need for consistency of various government policies towards climate change;
- Inadequacy in the ability and capacity of government agencies and communities to respond or adapt to climate variability and extreme natural events;
- The need to downscale climate change projections to be relevant to local decision makers;
- Inadequacy in science-based knowledge on adaptation approaches, practices, and technologies; and
- Lack of consistent and effective knowledge management and information dissemination on climate change.

As for mitigation, the research and development (R&D) sector has a major role in the design and implementation of REDD+ mechanisms, since policies and operational decisions must be based on scientific principles and empirical data and information. Although there is a growing body of research in the Philippines regarding climate change, considerable gaps remain. The R&D agenda can additionally include the following:

- Site-specific analysis of the drivers of deforestation and forest degradation for informed conservation interventions;
- Appropriate techniques for carbon and non-carbon benefit accounting, measuring, reporting and verification (MRV), and the selection of appropriate and equitable benefits;
- Baselines for emission reference levels, biodiversity, ecosystem services and social factors; and
- Policies regarding carbon cycle aspects of REDD+.

SOURCE: <http://denr.gov.ph/about-us/history/71-the-philippine-response-to-climate-change.html>

Discussion Questions

1. What are the indicators that point to the effects of climate change in the Philippines?
2. What efforts have been undertaken by the government to address the problem of climate change in the country?
3. What are the known “gaps” in the government’s efforts to address climate change? By what means can our government address these gaps?

4. How can you, as a citizen, do your share in helping address the problem of climate change in your community?
5. Why should the government and other sectors of society respond to the problems caused by climate change?

EMPOWER

- A. Reflect on your own participation in government activities in your community. Determine the skills and values that you need to develop further to become more effective participants in your local government. Create a plan of action and monitor your progress within two months. You may involve members of your family in this task.**
- B. Identify a project or program in your community that you can participate in. Involve yourself in community activities related to your chosen project. Document your participation and describe how this contributed to the community. Make a personal reflection on your participation and how it benefitted you as a citizen.**

Lesson 14

CIVIL SOCIETY ORGANIZATIONS AND SOCIAL MOVEMENTS

ENGAGE

As was previously discussed, there are various ways through which citizens may participate in the political affairs of the nation, including the exercise of suffrage, awareness of political issues, upholding empowerment, and the practice of environmental consciousness. Civil society organizations serve as one avenue to perform these actions and effectively exercise citizenship. In order to find out how civil society organizations contribute to nation-building and the political development of the state, we must be aware of how these organizations fulfill their specific purposes and respond to political issues. Most of all, it is important to be knowledgeable about how civil society organizations take part in social movements, which are regarded as one of the most powerful ways to effect changes in the political landscape of a state.

At the end of the lesson, students are expected to answer the following questions:

1. How do state and non-state actors contribute to the progress of the nation?
2. How do civil society organizations contribute to the political development of the state?
3. How does political inequality manifest itself in the Philippine setting?
4. How do civil society organizations address political inequality?
5. How do social movements shape Philippine society and politics?

DISCUSS

The Role of Civil Society in Philippine Politics

State and Non-State Actors

Citizens of the state often depend on the government to take care of their overall welfare. As such, government officials are often referred to as **state actors**, which are individuals who act on behalf of the government and its various agencies. State actors are expected to

be able to provide solutions to the problems experienced by citizens of the state, such as poverty, criminality, and malnutrition, among others. In order to do this, state actors create, implement, and constantly review policies and programs for the country.

However, governments cannot fully address all social issues and problems in the state. This is the reason behind the existence of **non-state actors**. Non-state actors are groups or individuals who are not part of the government, but contribute in one way or another to the various aspects of state development. They may influence legislation by coordinating with legislators in conceptualizing bills to be passed in Congress. They may also contribute to the implementation of certain government projects, or in government decisions regarding urgent matters.

Civil Society Organizations (CSOs)

Non-state actors and non-governmental organizations comprise a broad sector of society which is called **civil society**. The World Bank states that civil society encompasses “ethical, cultural, political, scientific, religious, or philanthropic considerations.” The groups that are part of civil society are known as **civil society organizations (CSOs)**. CSOs include community groups, non-governmental organizations (NGOs), labor unions, indigenous groups, charitable organizations, faith-based organizations, professional associations, and foundations. These organizations are non-governmental and non-profit, and work to address the concerns of the public and improve the lives of citizens.

One example of a civil society organization is a **non-governmental organization (NGO)**. An NGO is a non-profit entity which provides direct or indirect aid whenever and wherever the government may be unable to adequately provide services. This is important since the government may lack readily-available funds and resources. In order to accomplish its projects, an NGO receives funding from private donors as well as international groups or aid agencies.

NGOs are mostly recognized for assisting communities affected by calamities and disasters. However, the advocacies and projects of these organizations actually have a broad scope. In the Philippines, various NGOs focus on issues ranging from rural development to environmental preservation. The **Philippine Rural Reconstruction Movement, Inc. (PRRM)**, for example, aims to assist people in the rural communities in achieving holistic progress. Some examples of projects which the PRRM has conducted include the establishment of pharmacy centers and the conduct of livelihood and parenthood seminars. The **Philippine Business for Social Progress (PBSP)** is an NGO which promotes the practice of corporate social responsibility (CSR) in the business sector. The PBSP does this by providing financial grants and consultation services to various business. The **Haribon Foundation for the Conservation of Natural Resources** performs research-oriented and educational activities in order to promote the protection and preservation of natural resources and wildlife.

Addressing Political Inequality

Although civil society organizations are independent from the government, they also take part in the improvement of politics and governance in the country. They help shed light on the issues involving the government, and express support towards programs which are expected to address these issues. One such issue is **political inequality**. This is a form of inequality where political power is concentrated in a small group of individuals in government and society. In the Philippines, this phenomenon is often associated with **political dynasties**, or powerful political families whose members take various local and national government positions. Some of the well-known political dynasties in the country include the Aquinos, Binays, and the Villars. Current President Rodrigo Duterte is also part of a political dynasty. The presence of political dynasties has been a subject of debate for years. On one hand, political dynasties are believed to be a natural consequence of democracy since anyone who meets the qualifications set by the Constitution must be allowed to run for office. On the other hand, political dynasties are often accused of corruption and working merely for their own benefit. In fact, the prevalence of political dynasties is often associated with increased poverty. According to a 2012 study by the Asian Institute Management Policy Center, provinces with several political dynasties tend to have higher rates of poverty.

Furthermore, political dynasties are often linked to economic inequality. **Economic inequality** is described as the extensive control of a specific family or group of individuals over businesses, industries, and properties. Most political dynasties also wield significant economic power and influence. One example is the Aquino clan, who administers vast tracts of farmland in Hacienda Luisita, a 6,453 hectare land property in Tarlac, through their ownership of the Central Azucarera de Tarlac company. The Villar family, meanwhile, owns various businesses such as Vista Land and Lifescape Inc., a real estate company, and Polar Property Holdings Corporation, a mining company.

The prevalence of political inequality in the country is considered a significant challenge to good governance, and civil society organizations have taken steps to address this problem. One of these steps is supporting the efforts in Congress to abolish political dynasties. In 2015, youth groups in Metro Manila presented a manifesto lobbying for an end to political dynasties. These groups have called on the public to elect officials based on their track record as public servants, and not based on the political family they are part of. In the same year, the Cebu youth group First-Time Voters Network (FTVN) staged a province-wide campaign advocating the passage of the Anti-Political Dynasty Bill.

Civil society organizations have also campaigned actively against corruption. The Volunteers Against Crime and Corruption (VACC) and Transparency and Accountability Network (TAN) are two organizations that have campaigned against corruption in the government. These groups used media in spreading awareness about corruption and organized seminars to encourage the public to be vigilant towards corrupt practices.

Civil Society Organizations and Social Movements

Continual engagement of civil society in collective actions that address significant political and social issues eventually give rise to social movements. A **social movement** is defined as a collective and continuous effort in support of a certain objective which is expected to cause change in society. This collective effort may take the form of protests or demonstrations, educational or advocacy-related discussions, and media campaigns. Because of its public nature, social movements are expected to incite debates among the masses, and instigate political actions that would benefit society.

Social movements may focus on advocating the concerns of specific groups or sectors in society. One example is the One Billion Rising Movement, in which women's groups in the Philippines have participated in over the recent years. These groups include the Gabriela Women's Party, the women workers of Kilusang Mayo Uno, and Lila Pilipina. The One Billion Rising Movement has organized various activities and social action that advocated the eradication of poverty, unemployment, and violence against women. In 2016, the reach of the One Billion Rising Movement and its advocacies extended, as young men also participated in the annual protests.

Social movements may also be an avenue for citizens to bring about radical changes in the government. In the Philippines, social movements have given way to the overthrow of government officials who were found to have been involved in corruption and other malpractices in governance. For example, the Kongreso ng Mamamayang Pilipino (KOMPIL), a union of NGOs all over the country, contributed to the success of the People Power Movement in 1986, which ousted former President Ferdinand Marcos. Then, in 2001, the KOMPIL was revived as the KOMPIL II. It became one of the leading civil society organizations behind EDSA II, which led to the ouster of former President Joseph Estrada.

RECALL

- State and non-state actors both have contributions to the development of a country. State actors refer to government officials and the policymakers of the nation. On the other hand, non-state actors are not part of the government, but still influence the political conditions of the country.
- Civil society is considered to be an important aspect of state development. It encompasses a broad range of non-state actors that focus on the political, ethical, and philanthropic progress of the state. Civil society organizations work towards improving civil society. They are non-profit and non-governmental groups that work to bring about change in the state and the lives of citizens.

- Civil society organizations take an active role in addressing political inequality. In the Philippine setting, one indication of political inequality is the prevalence of political dynasties, or families who have control over several government positions both locally and nationally. Political dynasties are often criticized for engaging in corrupt practices. Civil society organizations work to address political inequality through information dissemination programs and by lobbying for the abolition of political dynasties.
- The activities of CSOs may give rise to social movements, or collective actions aimed at causing change in society. This change may involve addressing the needs of underrepresented sectors in society. It may also refer to radical transformations in the government, such as the overthrow of government officials.

EXAMINE

A. Identify the following.

- _____ 1. These are individuals who act on behalf of the government and its various agencies.
- _____ 2. These are groups or individuals who are not part of the government, but contribute to state development.
- _____ 3. This is a broad sector of society comprised of non-state actors and non-governmental organizations.
- _____ 4. This NGO assists people in the rural communities towards achieving progress.
- _____ 5. This NGO promotes the protection and preservation of natural resources and the wildlife.
- _____ 6. A form of inequality where political power is concentrated in a small group of individuals.
- _____ 7. Families whose members occupy various positions in the local and national government.
- _____ 8. The extensive control of a specific family or group of individuals over businesses, industries, or properties.

- _____ 9. This is a collective and continuous effort in support of a certain objective intended to bring about social change.
- _____ 10. This union of NGOs all over the country contributed to the success of the People Power Movement in 1986.

B. Write T if the statement is true; write F if the statement is false.

- _____ 1. State actors create, implement, and constantly review policies and programs for the country.
- _____ 2. Non-state actors do not have any power to influence legislation or governance.
- _____ 3. NGOs receive funding from private donors as well as international organizations or aid agencies.
- _____ 4. Civil society organizations express support towards programs which are expected to address the issues faced by the state.
- _____ 5. Political inequality is often associated with political dynasties.
- _____ 6. According to a 2012 study by the Asian Institute Management Policy Center, provinces with fewer political dynasties tend to have higher rates of poverty incidence.
- _____ 7. There are civil society organizations which have supported the efforts in Congress to abolish political dynasties.
- _____ 8. The Transparency and Action Network (TAN) and the Volunteers Against Crime and Corruption (VACC) have both used the media in spreading awareness about government corruption.
- _____ 9. Social movements aim to engage in political actions intended to bring about conflict in society.
- _____ 10. Social movements in the Philippines have brought about a number of radical changes in politics, such as the overthrow of government officials.

C. Answer the following questions.

1. What will happen if there are no civil society organizations in a state? How will its political affairs be affected?

2. How do non-governmental organizations complement government policies and action? Cite an example.

3. Why do political dynasties continue to exist in Philippine society? What changes will lead to their end?

4. How have civil society organizations responded to the prevalence of political inequality in the country?

5. How do social movements bring about changes and developments in our society?

EMPOWER

- A. In groups of five to six members, research on a specific NGO in your local community. Interview the leaders and the members of the NGO, as well as the people who have directly benefitted from the efforts of the NGO. Make a report highlighting how the organization contributes to social development and nation-building.**
- B. Organize yourselves in groups of five to six members, and research on a specific political dynasty in the country. This research may include interviews, opinion polls, and news report analyses. Using the information you gathered, evaluate the impact this dynasty had on the country. Report your findings in class.**

Appendix



THE 1987 CONSTITUTION THE CONSTITUTION OF THE REPUBLIC OF THE PHILIPPINES

PREAMBLE

We, the sovereign Filipino people, imploring the aid of Almighty God, in order to build a just and humane society and establish a Government that shall embody our ideals and aspirations, promote the common good, conserve and develop our patrimony, and secure to ourselves and our posterity the blessings of independence and democracy under the rule of law and a regime of truth, justice, freedom, love, equality, and peace, do ordain and promulgate this Constitution.

ARTICLE I

National Territory

The national territory comprises the Philippine archipelago, with all the islands and waters embraced therein, and all other territories over which the Philippines has sovereignty or jurisdiction, consisting of its terrestrial, fluvial, and aerial domains, including its territorial sea, the seabed, the subsoil, the insular shelves, and other submarine areas. The waters around, between, and connecting the islands of the archipelago, regardless of their breadth and dimensions, form part of the internal waters of the Philippines.

ARTICLE II

Declaration of Principles and State Policies

Principles

- SECTION 1.** The Philippines is a democratic and republican State. Sovereignty resides in the people and all government authority emanates from them.
- SECTION 2.** The Philippines renounces war as an instrument of national policy, adopts the generally accepted principles of international law as part of the law of the land and adheres to the policy of peace, equality, justice, freedom, cooperation, and amity with all nations.

- SECTION 3.** Civilian authority is, at all times, supreme over the military. The Armed Forces of the Philippines is the protector of the people and the State. Its goal is to secure the sovereignty of the State and the integrity of the national territory.
- SECTION 4.** The prime duty of the Government is to serve and protect the people. The Government may call upon the people to defend the State and, in the fulfillment thereof, all citizens may be required, under conditions provided by law, to render personal military or civil service.
- SECTION 5.** The maintenance of peace and order, the protection of life, liberty, and property, and the promotion of the general welfare are essential for the enjoyment by all the people of the blessings of democracy.
- SECTION 6.** The separation of Church and State shall be inviolable.

State Policies

- SECTION 7.** The State shall pursue an independent foreign policy. In its relations with other states the paramount consideration shall be national sovereignty, territorial integrity, national interest, and the right to self-determination.
- SECTION 8.** The Philippines, consistent with the national interest, adopts and pursues a policy of freedom from nuclear weapons in its territory.
- SECTION 9.** The State shall promote a just and dynamic social order that will ensure the prosperity and independence of the nation and free the people from poverty through policies that provide adequate social services, promote full employment, a rising standard of living, and an improved quality of life for all.
- SECTION 10.** The State shall promote social justice in all phases of national development.
- SECTION 11.** The State values the dignity of every human person and guarantees full respect for human rights.
- SECTION 12.** The State recognizes the sanctity of family life and shall protect and strengthen the family as a basic autonomous social institution. It shall equally protect the life of the mother and the life of the unborn from conception. The natural and primary right and duty of parents in the rearing of the youth for civic efficiency and the development of moral character shall receive the support of the Government.
- SECTION 13.** The State recognizes the vital role of the youth in nation-building and shall promote and protect their physical, moral, spiritual, intellectual, and social well-being. It shall inculcate in the youth patriotism and nationalism, and encourage their involvement in public and civic affairs.

- SECTION 14.** The State recognizes the role of women in nation-building, and shall ensure the fundamental equality before the law of women and men.
- SECTION 15.** The State shall protect and promote the right to health of the people and instill health consciousness among them.
- SECTION 16.** The State shall protect and advance the right of the people to a balanced and healthful ecology in accord with the rhythm and harmony of nature.
- SECTION 17.** The State shall give priority to education, science and technology, arts, culture, and sports to foster patriotism and nationalism, accelerate social progress, and promote total human liberation and development.
- SECTION 18.** The State affirms labor as a primary social economic force. It shall protect the rights of workers and promote their welfare.
- SECTION 19.** The State shall develop a self-reliant and independent national economy effectively controlled by Filipinos.
- SECTION 20.** The State recognizes the indispensable role of the private sector, encourages private enterprise, and provides incentives to needed investments.
- SECTION 21.** The State shall promote comprehensive rural development and agrarian reform.
- SECTION 22.** The State recognizes and promotes the rights of indigenous cultural communities within the framework of national unity and development.
- SECTION 23.** The State shall encourage non-governmental, community-based, or sectoral organizations that promote the welfare of the nation.
- SECTION 24.** The State recognizes the vital role of communication and information in nation-building.
- SECTION 25.** The State shall ensure the autonomy of local governments.
- SECTION 26.** The State shall guarantee equal access to opportunities for public service, and prohibit political dynasties as may be defined by law.
- SECTION 27.** The State shall maintain honesty and integrity in the public service and take positive and effective measures against graft and corruption.
- SECTION 28.** Subject to reasonable conditions prescribed by law, the State adopts and implements a policy of full public disclosure of all its transactions involving public interest.

ARTICLE III

Bill of Rights

- SECTION 1.** No person shall be deprived of life, liberty, or property without due process of law, nor shall any person be denied the equal protection of the laws.
- SECTION 2.** The right of the people to be secure in their persons, houses, papers, and effects against unreasonable searches and seizures of whatever nature and for any purpose shall be inviolable, and no search warrant or warrant of arrest shall issue except upon probable cause to be determined personally by the judge after examination under oath or affirmation of the complainant and the witnesses he may produce, and particularly describing the place to be searched and the persons or things to be seized.
- SECTION 3.** (1) The privacy of communication and correspondence shall be inviolable except upon lawful order of the court, or when public safety or order requires otherwise as prescribed by law.
- (2) Any evidence obtained in violation of this or the preceding section shall be inadmissible for any purpose in any proceeding.
- SECTION 4.** No law shall be passed abridging the freedom of speech, of expression, or of the press, or the right of the people peaceably to assemble and petition the government for redress of grievances.
- SECTION 5.** No law shall be made respecting an establishment of religion, or prohibiting the free exercise thereof. The free exercise and enjoyment of religious profession and worship, without discrimination or preference, shall forever be allowed. No religious test shall be required for the exercise of civil or political rights.
- SECTION 6.** The liberty of abode and of changing the same within the limits prescribed by law shall not be impaired except upon lawful order of the court. Neither shall the right to travel be impaired except in the interest of national security, public safety, or public health, as may be provided by law.
- SECTION 7.** The right of the people to information on matters of public concern shall be recognized. Access to official records, and to documents, and papers pertaining to official acts, transactions, or decisions, as well as to government research data used as basis for policy development, shall be afforded the citizen, subject to such limitations as may be provided by law.
- SECTION 8.** The right of the people, including those employed in the public and private sectors, to form unions, associations, or societies for purposes not contrary to law shall not be abridged.
- SECTION 9.** Private property shall not be taken for public use without just compensation.

SECTION 10. No law impairing the obligation of contracts shall be passed.

SECTION 11. Free access to the courts and quasi-judicial bodies and adequate legal assistance shall not be denied to any person by reason of poverty.

SECTION 12. (1) Any person under investigation for the commission of an offense shall have the right to be informed of his right to remain silent and to have competent and independent counsel preferably of his own choice. If the person cannot afford the services of counsel, he must be provided with one. These rights cannot be waived except in writing and in the presence of counsel.

(2) No torture, force, violence, threat, intimidation, or any other means which vitiate the free will shall be used against him. Secret detention places, solitary, incommunicado, or other similar forms of detention are prohibited.

(3) Any confession or admission obtained in violation of this or Section 17 hereof shall be inadmissible in evidence against him.

(4) The law shall provide for penal and civil sanctions for violations of this section as well as compensation to and rehabilitation of victims of torture or similar practices, and their families.

SECTION 13. All persons, except those charged with offenses punishable by reclusion perpetua when evidence of guilt is strong, shall, before conviction, be bailable by sufficient sureties, or be released on recognizance as may be provided by law. The right to bail shall not be impaired even when the privilege of the writ of habeas corpus is suspended. Excessive bail shall not be required.

SECTION 14. (1) No person shall be held to answer for a criminal offense without due process of law.

(2) In all criminal prosecutions, the accused shall be presumed innocent until the contrary is proved, and shall enjoy the right to be heard by himself and counsel, to be informed of the nature and cause of the accusation against him, to have a speedy, impartial, and public trial, to meet the witnesses face to face, and to have compulsory process to secure the attendance of witnesses and the production of evidence in his behalf. However, after arraignment, trial may proceed notwithstanding the absence of the accused provided that he has been duly notified and his failure to appear is unjustifiable.

SECTION 15. The privilege of the writ of habeas corpus shall not be suspended except in cases of invasion or rebellion when the public safety requires it.

SECTION 16. All persons shall have the right to a speedy disposition of their cases before all judicial, quasi-judicial, or administrative bodies.

SECTION 17. No person shall be compelled to be a witness against himself.

SECTION 18. (1) No person shall be detained solely by reason of his political beliefs and aspirations.

(2) No involuntary servitude in any form shall exist except as a punishment for a crime whereof the party shall have been duly convicted.

SECTION 19. (1) Excessive fines shall not be imposed, nor cruel, degrading or inhuman punishment inflicted. Neither shall death penalty be imposed, unless, for compelling reasons involving heinous crimes, the Congress hereafter provides for it. Any death penalty already imposed shall be reduced to reclusion perpetua.

(2) The employment of physical, psychological, or degrading punishment against any prisoner or detainee or the use of substandard or inadequate penal facilities under subhuman conditions shall be dealt with by law.

SECTION 20. No person shall be imprisoned for debt or non-payment of a poll tax.

SECTION 21. No person shall be twice put in jeopardy of punishment for the same offense. If an act is punished by a law and an ordinance, conviction or acquittal under either shall constitute a bar to another prosecution for the same act.

SECTION 22. No ex post facto law or bill of attainder shall be enacted.

ARTICLE IV

Citizenship

SECTION 1. The following are citizens of the Philippines:

- (1) Those who are citizens of the Philippines at the time of the adoption of this Constitution;
- (2) Those whose fathers or mothers are citizens of the Philippines;
- (3) Those born before January 17, 1973, of Filipino mothers, who elect Philippine citizenship upon reaching the age of majority; and
- (4) Those who are naturalized in accordance with law.

SECTION 2. Natural-born citizens are those who are citizens of the Philippines from birth without having to perform any act to acquire or perfect their Philippine citizenship.

Those who elect Philippine citizenship in accordance with paragraph (3), Section 1 hereof shall be deemed natural-born citizens.

SECTION 3. Philippine citizenship may be lost or reacquired in the manner provided by law.

SECTION 4. Citizens of the Philippines who marry aliens shall retain their citizenship, unless by their act or omission they are deemed, under the law, to have renounced it.

SECTION 5. Dual allegiance of citizens is inimical to the national interest and shall be dealt with by law.

ARTICLE V

Suffrage

SECTION 1. Suffrage may be exercised by all citizens of the Philippines not otherwise disqualified by law, who are at least eighteen years of age, and who shall have resided in the Philippines for at least one year and in the place wherein they propose to vote for at least six months immediately preceding the election. No literacy, property, or other substantive requirement shall be imposed on the exercise of suffrage.

SECTION 2. The Congress shall provide a system for securing the secrecy and sanctity of the ballot as well as a system for absentee voting by qualified Filipinos abroad.

The Congress shall also design a procedure for the disabled and the illiterates to vote without the assistance of other persons. Until then, they shall be allowed to vote under existing laws and such rules as the Commission on Elections may promulgate to protect the secrecy of the ballot.

ARTICLE VI

The Legislative Department

SECTION 1. The legislative power shall be vested in the Congress of the Philippines which shall consist of a Senate and a House of Representatives, except to the extent reserved to the people by the provision on initiative and referendum.

SECTION 2. The Senate shall be composed of twenty-four Senators who shall be elected at large by the qualified voters of the Philippines, as may be provided by law.

SECTION 3. No person shall be a Senator unless he is a natural-born citizen of the Philippines, and, on the day of the election, is at least thirty-five years of age,

able to read and write, a registered voter, and a resident of the Philippines for not less than two years immediately preceding the day of the election.

SECTION 4. The term of office of the Senators shall be six years and shall commence, unless otherwise provided by law, at noon on the thirtieth day of June next following their election.

No Senator shall serve for more than two consecutive terms. Voluntary renunciation of the office for any length of time shall not be considered as an interruption in the continuity of his service for the full term for which he was elected.

SECTION 5. (1) The House of Representatives shall be composed of not more than two hundred and fifty members, unless otherwise fixed by law, who shall be elected from legislative districts apportioned among the provinces, cities, and the Metropolitan Manila area in accordance with the number of their respective inhabitants, and on the basis of a uniform and progressive ratio, and those who, as provided by law, shall be elected through a party-list system of registered national, regional, and sectoral parties or organizations.

(2) The party-list representatives shall constitute twenty per centum of the total number of representatives including those under the party list. For three consecutive terms after the ratification of this Constitution, one-half of the seats allocated to party-list representatives shall be filled, as provided by law, by selection or election from the labor, peasant, urban poor, indigenous cultural communities, women, youth, and such other sectors as may be provided by law, except the religious sector.

(3) Each legislative district shall comprise, as far as practicable, contiguous, compact and adjacent territory. Each city with a population of at least two hundred fifty thousand, or each province, shall have at least one representative.

(4) Within three years following the return of every census, the Congress shall make a reapportionment of legislative districts based on the standards provided in this section.

SECTION 6. No person shall be a Member of the House of Representatives unless he is a natural-born citizen of the Philippines and, on the day of the election, is at least twenty-five years of age, able to read and write, and, except the party-list representatives, a registered voter in the district in which he shall be elected, and a resident thereof for a period of not less than one year immediately preceding the day of the election.

SECTION 7. The Members of the House of Representatives shall be elected for a term of three years which shall begin, unless otherwise provided by law, at noon on the thirtieth day of June next following their election.

No member of the House of Representatives shall serve for more than three consecutive terms. Voluntary renunciation of the office for any length of time shall not be considered as an interruption in the continuity of his service for the full term for which he was elected.

SECTION 8. Unless otherwise provided by law, the regular election of the Senators and the Members of the House of Representatives shall be held on the second Monday of May.

SECTION 9. In case of vacancy in the Senate or in the House of Representatives, a special election may be called to fill such vacancy in the manner prescribed by law, but the Senator or Member of the House of Representatives thus elected shall serve only for the unexpired term.

SECTION 10. The salaries of Senators and Members of the House of Representatives shall be determined by law. No increase in said compensation shall take effect until after the expiration of the full term of all the Members of the Senate and the House of Representatives approving such increase.

SECTION 11. A Senator or Member of the House of Representatives shall, in all offenses punishable by not more than six years imprisonment, be privileged from arrest while the Congress is in session. No Member shall be questioned nor be held liable in any other place for any speech or debate in the Congress or in any committee thereof.

SECTION 12. All Members of the Senate and the House of Representatives shall, upon assumption of office, make a full disclosure of their financial and business interests. They shall notify the House concerned of a potential conflict of interest that may arise from the filing of a proposed legislation of which they are authors.

SECTION 13. No Senator or Member of the House of Representatives may hold any other office or employment in the Government, or any subdivision, agency, or instrumentality thereof, including government-owned or controlled corporations or their subsidiaries, during his term without forfeiting his seat. Neither shall he be appointed to any office which may have been created or the emoluments thereof increased during the term for which he was elected.

SECTION 14. No Senator or Member of the House of Representatives may personally appear as counsel before any court of justice or before the Electoral Tribunals, or quasi-judicial and other administrative bodies. Neither shall he, directly or

indirectly, be interested financially in any contract with, or in any franchise or special privilege granted by the Government, or any subdivision, agency, or instrumentality thereof, including any government-owned or controlled corporation, or its subsidiary, during his term of office. He shall not intervene in any matter before any office of the Government for his pecuniary benefit or where he may be called upon to act on account of his office.

SECTION 15. The Congress shall convene once every year on the fourth Monday of July for its regular session, unless a different date is fixed by law, and shall continue to be in session for such number of days as it may determine until thirty days before the opening of its next regular session, exclusive of Saturdays, Sundays, and legal holidays. The President may call a special session at any time.

SECTION 16. (1) The Senate shall elect its President and the House of Representatives its Speaker, by a majority vote of all its respective Members.

Each House shall choose such other officers as it may deem necessary.

(2) A majority of each House shall constitute a quorum to do business, but a smaller number may adjourn from day to day and may compel the attendance of absent Members in such manner, and under such penalties, as such House may provide.

(3) Each House may determine the rules of its proceedings, punish its Members for disorderly behavior, and, with the concurrence of two-thirds of all its Members, suspend or expel a Member. A penalty of suspension, when imposed, shall not exceed sixty days.

(4) Each House shall keep a Journal of its proceedings, and from time to time publish the same, excepting such parts as may, in its judgment, affect national security; and the yeas and nays on any question shall, at the request of one-fifth of the Members present, be entered in the Journal.

Each House shall also keep a Record of its proceedings.

(5) Neither House during the sessions of the Congress shall, without the consent of the other, adjourn for more than three days, nor to any other place than that in which the two Houses shall be sitting.

SECTION 17. The Senate and the House of Representatives shall each have an Electoral Tribunal which shall be the sole judge of all contests relating to the election, returns, and qualifications of their respective Members. Each Electoral Tribunal shall be composed of nine Members, three of whom shall be Justices of the Supreme Court to be designated by the Chief Justice, and the remaining six shall be Members of the Senate or the House of Representatives, as the case may be, who shall be chosen on the basis of proportional representation

from the political parties and the parties or organizations registered under the party-list system represented therein. The senior Justice in the Electoral Tribunal shall be its Chairman.

SECTION 18. There shall be a Commission on Appointments consisting of the President of the Senate, as ex officio Chairman, twelve Senators and twelve Members of the House of Representatives, elected by each House on the basis of proportional representation from the political parties and parties or organizations registered under the party-list system represented therein. The Chairman of the Commission shall not vote, except in case of a tie. The Commission shall act on all appointments submitted to it within thirty session days of the Congress from their submission. The Commission shall rule by a majority vote of all the Members.

SECTION 19. The Electoral Tribunals and the Commission on Appointments shall be constituted within thirty days after the Senate and the House of Representatives shall have been organized with the election of the President and the Speaker. The Commission on Appointments shall meet only while the Congress is in session, at the call of its Chairman or a majority of all its Members, to discharge such powers and functions as are herein conferred upon it.

SECTION 20. The records and books of accounts of the Congress shall be preserved and be open to the public in accordance with law, and such books shall be audited by the Commission on Audit which shall publish annually an itemized list of amounts paid to and expenses incurred for each Member.

SECTION 21. The Senate or the House of Representatives or any of its respective committees may conduct inquiries in aid of legislation in accordance with its duly published rules of procedure. The rights of persons appearing in or affected by such inquiries shall be respected.

SECTION 22. The heads of departments may upon their own initiative, with the consent of the President, or upon the request of either House, as the rules of each House shall provide, appear before and be heard by such House on any matter pertaining to their departments. Written questions shall be submitted to the President of the Senate or the Speaker of the House of Representatives at least three days before their scheduled appearance. Interpellations shall not be limited to written questions, but may cover matters related thereto. When the security of the State or the public interest so requires and the President so states in writing, the appearance shall be conducted in executive session.

SECTION 23. (1) The Congress, by a vote of two-thirds of both Houses in joint session assembled, voting separately, shall have the sole power to declare the existence of a state of war.

- (2) In times of war or other national emergency, the Congress may, by law, authorize the President, for a limited period and subject to such restrictions as it may prescribe, to exercise powers necessary and proper to carry out a declared national policy. Unless sooner withdrawn by resolution of the Congress, such powers shall cease upon the next adjournment thereof.

SECTION 24. All appropriation, revenue or tariff bills, bills authorizing increase of the public debt, bills of local application, and private bills shall originate exclusively in the House of Representatives, but the Senate may propose or concur with amendments.

SECTION 25. (1) The Congress may not increase the appropriations recommended by the President for the operation of the Government as specified in the budget. The form, content, and manner of preparation of the budget shall be prescribed by law.

- (2) No provision or enactment shall be embraced in the general appropriations bill unless it relates specifically to some particular appropriation therein. Any such provision or enactment shall be limited in its operation to the appropriation to which it relates.

- (3) The procedure in approving appropriations for the Congress shall strictly follow the procedure for approving appropriations for other departments and agencies.

- (4) A special appropriations bill shall specify the purpose for which it is intended, and shall be supported by funds actually available as certified by the National Treasurer, or to be raised by a corresponding revenue proposed therein.

- (5) No law shall be passed authorizing any transfer of appropriations; however, the President, the President of the Senate, the Speaker of the House of Representatives, the Chief Justice of the Supreme Court, and the heads of Constitutional Commissions may, by law, be authorized to augment any item in the general appropriations law for their respective offices from savings in other items of their respective appropriations.

- (6) Discretionary funds appropriated for particular officials shall be disbursed only for public purposes to be supported by appropriate vouchers and subject to such guidelines as may be prescribed by law.

- (7) If, by the end of any fiscal year, the Congress shall have failed to pass the general appropriations bill for the ensuing fiscal year, the general appropriations law for the preceding fiscal year shall be deemed reenacted and shall remain in force and effect until the general appropriations bill is passed by the Congress.

SECTION 26. (1) Every bill passed by the Congress shall embrace only one subject which shall be expressed in the title thereof.

(2) No bill passed by either House shall become a law unless it has passed three readings on separate days, and printed copies thereof in its final form have been distributed to its Members three days before its passage, except when the President certifies to the necessity of its immediate enactment to meet a public calamity or emergency. Upon the last reading of a bill, no amendment thereto shall be allowed, and the vote thereon shall be taken immediately thereafter, and the yeas and nays entered in the Journal.

SECTION 27. (1) Every bill passed by the Congress shall, before it becomes a law, be presented to the President. If he approves the same, he shall sign it; otherwise, he shall veto it and return the same with his objections to the House where it originated, which shall enter the objections at large in its Journal and proceed to reconsider it. If, after such reconsideration, two-thirds of all the Members of such House shall agree to pass the bill, it shall be sent, together with the objections, to the other House by which it shall likewise be reconsidered, and if approved by two-thirds of all the Members of that House, it shall become a law. In all such cases, the votes of each House shall be determined by yeas or nays, and the names of the Members voting for or against shall be entered in its Journal. The President shall communicate his veto of any bill to the House where it originated within thirty days after the date of receipt thereof; otherwise, it shall become a law as if he had signed it.

(2) The President shall have the power to veto any particular item or items in an appropriation, revenue, or tariff bill, but the veto shall not affect the item or items to which he does not object.

SECTION 28. (1) The rule of taxation shall be uniform and equitable. The Congress shall evolve a progressive system of taxation.

(2) The Congress may, by law, authorize the President to fix within specified limits, and subject to such limitations and restrictions as it may impose, tariff rates, import and export quotas, tonnage and wharfage dues, and other duties or imposts within the framework of the national development program of the Government.

(3) Charitable institutions, churches and parsonages or convents appurtenant thereto, mosques, non-profit cemeteries, and all lands, buildings, and improvements, actually, directly, and exclusively used for religious, charitable, or educational purposes shall be exempt from taxation.

(4) No law granting any tax exemption shall be passed without the concurrence of a majority of all the Members of the Congress.

SECTION 29. (1) No money shall be paid out of the Treasury except in pursuance of an appropriation made by law.

(2) No public money or property shall be appropriated, applied, paid, or employed, directly or indirectly, for the use, benefit, or support of any sect, church, denomination, sectarian institution, or system of religion, or of any priest, preacher, minister, or other religious teacher, or dignitary as such, except when such priest, preacher, minister, or dignitary is assigned to the armed forces, or to any penal institution, or government orphanage or leprosarium.

(3) All money collected on any tax levied for a special purpose shall be treated as a special fund and paid out for such purpose only. If the purpose for which a special fund was created has been fulfilled or abandoned, the balance, if any, shall be transferred to the general funds of the Government.

SECTION 30. No law shall be passed increasing the appellate jurisdiction of the Supreme Court as provided in this Constitution without its advice and concurrence.

SECTION 31. No law granting a title of royalty or nobility shall be enacted.

SECTION 32. The Congress shall, as early as possible, provide for a system of initiative and referendum, and the exceptions therefrom, whereby the people can directly propose and enact laws or approve or reject any act or law or part thereof passed by the Congress or local legislative body after the registration of a petition therefor signed by at least ten per centum of the total number of registered voters, of which every legislative district must be represented by at least three per centum of the registered voters thereof.

ARTICLE VII

Executive Department

SECTION 1. The executive power shall be vested in the President of the Philippines.

SECTION 2. No person may be elected President unless he is a natural-born citizen of the Philippines, a registered voter, able to read and write, at least forty years of age on the day of the election, and a resident of the Philippines for at least ten years immediately preceding such election.

SECTION 3. There shall be a Vice-President who shall have the same qualifications and term of office and be elected with and in the same manner as the President. He may be removed from office in the same manner as the President.

The Vice-President may be appointed as a Member of the Cabinet. Such appointment requires no confirmation.

SECTION 4. The President and the Vice-President shall be elected by direct vote of the people for a term of six years which shall begin at noon on the thirtieth day of June next following the day of the election and shall end at noon of the same date six years thereafter. The President shall not be eligible for any reelection. No person who has succeeded as President and has served as such for more than four years shall be qualified for election to the same office at any time.

No Vice-President shall serve for more than two consecutive terms. Voluntary renunciation of the office for any length of time shall not be considered as an interruption in the continuity of the service for the full term for which he was elected.

Unless otherwise provided by law, the regular election for President and Vice-President shall be held on the second Monday of May.

The returns of every election for President and Vice-President, duly certified by the board of canvassers of each province or city, shall be transmitted to the Congress, directed to the President of the Senate. Upon receipt of the certificates of canvass, the President of the Senate shall, not later than thirty days after the day of the election, open all certificates in the presence of the Senate and the House of Representatives in joint public session, and the Congress, upon determination of the authenticity and due execution thereof in the manner provided by law, canvass the votes.

The person having the highest number of votes shall be proclaimed elected, but in case two or more shall have an equal and highest number of votes, one of them shall forthwith be chosen by the vote of a majority of all the Members of both Houses of the Congress, voting separately.

The Congress shall promulgate its rules for the canvassing of the certificates.

The Supreme Court, sitting en banc, shall be the sole judge of all contests relating to the election, returns, and qualifications of the President or Vice-President, and may promulgate its rules for the purpose.

SECTION 5. Before they enter on the execution of their office, the President, the Vice-President, or the Acting President shall take the following oath or affirmation:

“I do solemnly swear (or affirm) that I will faithfully and conscientiously fulfill my duties as President (or Vice-President or Acting President) of the Philippines, preserve and defend its Constitution, execute its laws, do justice to every man, and consecrate myself to the service of the Nation. So help me God.” (In case of affirmation, last sentence will be omitted.)

SECTION 6. The President shall have an official residence. The salaries of the President and Vice-President shall be determined by law and shall not be decreased

during their tenure. No increase in said compensation shall take effect until after the expiration of the term of the incumbent during which such increase was approved. They shall not receive during their tenure any other emolument from the Government or any other source.

SECTION 7. The President-elect and the Vice-President-elect shall assume office at the beginning of their terms.

If the President-elect fails to qualify, the Vice-President-elect shall act as President until the President-elect shall have qualified.

If a President shall not have been chosen, the Vice-President-elect shall act as President until a President shall have been chosen and qualified.

If at the beginning of the term of the President, the President-elect shall have died or shall have become permanently disabled, the Vice-President-elect shall become President.

Where no President and Vice-President shall have been chosen or shall have qualified, or where both shall have died or become permanently disabled, the President of the Senate or, in case of his inability, the Speaker of the House of Representatives shall act as President until a President or a Vice-President shall have been chosen and qualified.

The Congress shall, by law, provide for the manner in which one who is to act as President shall be selected until a President or a Vice-President shall have qualified, in case of death, permanent disability, or inability of the officials mentioned in the next preceding paragraph.

SECTION 8. In case of death, permanent disability, removal from office, or resignation of the President, the Vice-President shall become the President to serve the unexpired term. In case of death, permanent disability, removal from office, or resignation of both the President and Vice-President, the President of the Senate or, in case of his inability, the Speaker of the House of Representatives, shall then act as President until the President or Vice-President shall have been elected and qualified.

The Congress shall, by law, provide who shall serve as President in case of death, permanent disability, or resignation of the Acting President. He shall serve until the President or the Vice-President shall have been elected and qualified, and be subject to the same restrictions of powers and disqualifications as the Acting President.

SECTION 9. Whenever there is a vacancy in the Office of the Vice-President during the term for which he was elected, the President shall nominate a Vice-President from among the Members of the Senate and the House of Representatives who

shall assume office upon confirmation by a majority vote of all the Members of both Houses of the Congress, voting separately.

SECTION 10. The Congress shall, at ten o'clock in the morning of the third day after the vacancy in the offices of the President and Vice-President occurs, convene in accordance with its rules without need of a call and within seven days enact a law calling for a special election to elect a President and a Vice-President to be held not earlier than forty-five days nor later than sixty days from the time of such call. The bill calling such special election shall be deemed certified under paragraph 2, Section 26, Article VI of this Constitution and shall become law upon its approval on third reading by the Congress. Appropriations for the special election shall be charged against any current appropriations and shall be exempt from the requirements of paragraph 4, Section 25, Article VI of this Constitution. The convening of the Congress cannot be suspended nor the special election postponed. No special election shall be called if the vacancy occurs within eighteen months before the date of the next presidential election.

SECTION 11. Whenever the President transmits to the President of the Senate and the Speaker of the House of Representatives his written declaration that he is unable to discharge the powers and duties of his office, and until he transmits to them a written declaration to the contrary, such powers and duties shall be discharged by the Vice-President as Acting President.

Whenever a majority of all the Members of the Cabinet transmit to the President of the Senate and to the Speaker of the House of Representatives their written declaration that the President is unable to discharge the powers and duties of his office, the Vice-President shall immediately assume the powers and duties of the office as Acting President.

Thereafter, when the President transmits to the President of the Senate and to the Speaker of the House of Representatives his written declaration that no inability exists, he shall reassume the powers and duties of his office. Meanwhile, should a majority of all the Members of the Cabinet transmit within five days to the President of the Senate and to the Speaker of the House of Representatives their written declaration that the President is unable to discharge the powers and duties of his office, the Congress shall decide the issue. For that purpose, the Congress shall convene, if it is not in session, within forty-eight hours, in accordance with its rules and without need of call.

If the Congress, within ten days after receipt of the last written declaration, or, if not in session, within twelve days after it is required to assemble, determines by a two-thirds vote of both Houses, voting separately, that the President is unable to discharge the powers and duties of his office, the Vice-President

shall act as the President; otherwise, the President shall continue exercising the powers and duties of his office.

SECTION 12. In case of serious illness of the President, the public shall be informed of the state of his health. The Members of the Cabinet in charge of national security and foreign relations and the Chief of Staff of the Armed Forces of the Philippines, shall not be denied access to the President during such illness.

SECTION 13. The President, Vice-President, the Members of the Cabinet, and their deputies or assistants shall not, unless otherwise provided in this Constitution, hold any other office or employment during their tenure. They shall not, during said tenure, directly or indirectly, practice any other profession, participate in any business, or be financially interested in any contract with, or in any franchise, or special privilege granted by the Government or any subdivision, agency, or instrumentality thereof, including government-owned or controlled corporations or their subsidiaries. They shall strictly avoid conflict of interest in the conduct of their office.

The spouse and relatives by consanguinity or affinity within the fourth civil degree of the President shall not during his tenure be appointed as members of the Constitutional Commissions, or the Office of the Ombudsman, or as Secretaries, Undersecretaries, chairmen or heads of bureaus or offices, including government-owned or controlled corporations and their subsidiaries.

SECTION 14. Appointments extended by an Acting President shall remain effective, unless revoked by the elected President within ninety days from his assumption or reassumption of office.

SECTION 15. Two months immediately before the next presidential elections and up to the end of his term, a President or Acting President shall not make appointments, except temporary appointments to executive positions when continued vacancies therein will prejudice public service or endanger public safety.

SECTION 16. The President shall nominate and, with the consent of the Commission on Appointments, appoint the heads of the executive departments, ambassadors, other public ministers and consuls, or officers of the armed forces from the rank of colonel or naval captain, and other officers whose appointments are vested in him in this Constitution. He shall also appoint all other officers of the Government whose appointments are not otherwise provided for by law, and those whom he may be authorized by law to appoint. The Congress may, by law, vest the appointment of other officers lower in rank in the President alone, in the courts, or in the heads of departments, agencies, commissions, or boards.

The President shall have the power to make appointments during the recess of the Congress, whether voluntary or compulsory, but such appointments shall be effective only until after disapproval by the Commission on Appointments or until the next adjournment of the Congress.

SECTION 17. The President shall have control of all the executive departments, bureaus, and offices. He shall ensure that the laws be faithfully executed.

SECTION 18. The President shall be the Commander-in-Chief of all armed forces of the Philippines and whenever it becomes necessary, he may call out such armed forces to prevent or suppress lawless violence, invasion or rebellion. In case of invasion or rebellion, when the public safety requires it, he may, for a period not exceeding sixty days, suspend the privilege of the writ of habeas corpus or place the Philippines or any part thereof under martial law. Within forty-eight hours from the proclamation of martial law or the suspension of the privilege of the writ of habeas corpus, the President shall submit a report in person or in writing to the Congress. The Congress, voting jointly, by a vote of at least a majority of all its Members in regular or special session, may revoke such proclamation or suspension, which revocation shall not be set aside by the President. Upon the initiative of the President, the Congress may, in the same manner, extend such proclamation or suspension for a period to be determined by the Congress, if the invasion or rebellion shall persist and public safety requires it.

The Congress, if not in session, shall, within twenty-four hours following such proclamation or suspension, convene in accordance with its rules without any need of a call.

The Supreme Court may review, in an appropriate proceeding filed by any citizen, the sufficiency of the factual basis of the proclamation of martial law or the suspension of the privilege of the writ or the extension thereof, and must promulgate its decision thereon within thirty days from its filing.

A state of martial law does not suspend the operation of the Constitution, nor supplant the functioning of the civil courts or legislative assemblies, nor authorize the conferment of jurisdiction on military courts and agencies over civilians where civil courts are able to function, nor automatically suspend the privilege of the writ.

The suspension of the privilege of the writ shall apply only to persons judicially charged for rebellion or offenses inherent in or directly connected with the invasion.

During the suspension of the privilege of the writ, any person thus arrested or detained shall be judicially charged within three days, otherwise he shall be released.

SECTION 19. Except in cases of impeachment, or as otherwise provided in this Constitution, the President may grant reprieves, commutations and pardons, and remit fines and forfeitures, after conviction by final judgment.

He shall also have the power to grant amnesty with the concurrence of a majority of all the Members of the Congress.

SECTION 20. The President may contract or guarantee foreign loans on behalf of the Republic of the Philippines with the prior concurrence of the Monetary Board, and subject to such limitations as may be provided by law. The Monetary Board shall, within thirty days from the end of every quarter of the calendar year, submit to the Congress a complete report of its decisions on applications for loans to be contracted or guaranteed by the Government or government-owned and controlled corporations which would have the effect of increasing the foreign debt, and containing other matters as may be provided by law.

SECTION 21. No treaty or international agreement shall be valid and effective unless concurred in by at least two-thirds of all the Members of the Senate.

SECTION 22. The President shall submit to the Congress within thirty days from the opening of every regular session, as the basis of the general appropriations bill, a budget of expenditures and sources of financing, including receipts from existing and proposed revenue measures.

SECTION 23. The President shall address the Congress at the opening of its regular session. He may also appear before it at any other time.

ARTICLE VIII

Judicial Department

SECTION 1. The judicial power shall be vested in one Supreme Court and in such lower courts as may be established by law.

Judicial power includes the duty of the courts of justice to settle actual controversies involving rights which are legally demandable and enforceable, and to determine whether or not there has been a grave abuse of discretion amounting to lack or excess of jurisdiction on the part of any branch or instrumentality of the Government.

SECTION 2. The Congress shall have the power to define, prescribe, and apportion the jurisdiction of various courts but may not deprive the Supreme Court of its jurisdiction over cases enumerated in Section 5 hereof.

No law shall be passed reorganizing the Judiciary when it undermines the security of tenure of its Members.

SECTION 3. The Judiciary shall enjoy fiscal autonomy. Appropriations for the Judiciary may not be reduced by the legislature below the amount appropriated for the previous year and, after approval, shall be automatically and regularly released.

SECTION 4. (1) The Supreme Court shall be composed of a Chief Justice and fourteen Associate Justices. It may sit en banc or in its discretion, in divisions of three, five, or seven Members. Any vacancy shall be filled within ninety days from the occurrence thereof.

(2) All cases involving the constitutionality of a treaty, international or executive agreement, or law, which shall be heard by the Supreme Court en banc, and all other cases which under the Rules of Court are required to be heard en banc, including those involving the constitutionality, application, or operation of presidential decrees, proclamations, orders, instructions, ordinances, and other regulations, shall be decided with the concurrence of a majority of the Members who actually took part in the deliberations on the issues in the case and voted thereon.

(3) Cases or matters heard by a division shall be decided or resolved with the concurrence of a majority of the Members who actually took part in the deliberations on the issues in the case and voted thereon, and in no case, without the concurrence of at least three of such Members. When the required number is not obtained, the case shall be decided en banc: Provided, that no doctrine or principle of law laid down by the court in a decision rendered en banc or in division may be modified or reversed except by the court sitting en banc.

SECTION 5. The Supreme Court shall have the following powers:

(1) Exercise original jurisdiction over cases affecting ambassadors, other public ministers and consuls, and over petitions for certiorari, prohibition, mandamus, quo warranto, and habeas corpus.

(2) Review, revise, reverse, modify, or affirm on appeal or certiorari, as the law or the Rules of Court may provide, final judgments and orders of lower courts in:

(a) All cases in which the constitutionality or validity of any treaty, international or executive agreement, law, presidential decree, proclamation, order, instruction, ordinance, or regulation is in question.

(b) All cases involving the legality of any tax, impost, assessment, or toll, or any penalty imposed in relation thereto.

- (c) All cases in which the jurisdiction of any lower court is in issue.
 - (d) All criminal cases in which the penalty imposed is reclusion perpetua or higher.
 - (e) All cases in which only an error or question of law is involved.
- (3) Assign temporarily judges of lower courts to other stations as public interest may require. Such temporary assignment shall not exceed six months without the consent of the judge concerned.
 - (4) Order a change of venue or place of trial to avoid a miscarriage of justice.
 - (5) Promulgate rules concerning the protection and enforcement of constitutional rights, pleading, practice, and procedure in all courts, the admission to the practice of law, the Integrated Bar, and legal assistance to the underprivileged. Such rules shall provide a simplified and inexpensive procedure for the speedy disposition of cases, shall be uniform for all courts of the same grade, and shall not diminish, increase, or modify substantive rights. Rules of procedure of special courts and quasi-judicial bodies shall remain effective unless disapproved by the Supreme Court.
 - (6) Appoint all officials and employees of the Judiciary in accordance with the Civil Service Law.

SECTION 6. The Supreme Court shall have administrative supervision over all courts and the personnel thereof.

- SECTION 7.**
- (1) No person shall be appointed Member of the Supreme Court or any lower collegiate court unless he is a natural-born citizen of the Philippines. A Member of the Supreme Court must be at least forty years of age, and must have been for fifteen years or more a judge of a lower court or engaged in the practice of law in the Philippines.
 - (2) The Congress shall prescribe the qualifications of judges of lower courts, but no person may be appointed judge thereof unless he is a citizen of the Philippines and a member of the Philippine Bar.
 - (3) A Member of the Judiciary must be a person of proven competence, integrity, probity, and independence.

SECTION 8. (1) A Judicial and Bar Council is hereby created under the supervision of the Supreme Court composed of the Chief Justice as ex officio Chairman, the Secretary of Justice, and a representative of the Congress as ex officio Members, a representative of the Integrated Bar, a professor of law, a retired Member of the Supreme Court, and a representative of the private sector.

- (2) The regular Members of the Council shall be appointed by the President for a term of four years with the consent of the Commission on Appointments. Of the Members first appointed, the representative of the Integrated Bar shall serve for four years, the professor of law for three years, the retired Justice for two years, and the representative of the private sector for one year.
- (3) The Clerk of the Supreme Court shall be the Secretary ex officio of the Council and shall keep a record of its proceedings.
- (4) The regular Members of the Council shall receive such emoluments as may be determined by the Supreme Court. The Supreme Court shall provide in its annual budget the appropriations for the Council.
- (5) The Council shall have the principal function of recommending appointees to the Judiciary. It may exercise such other functions and duties as the Supreme Court may assign to it.

SECTION 9. The Members of the Supreme Court and judges of lower courts shall be appointed by the President from a list of at least three nominees prepared by the Judicial and Bar Council for every vacancy. Such appointments need no confirmation.

For the lower courts, the President shall issue the appointments within ninety days from the submission of the list.

SECTION 10. The salary of the Chief Justice and of the Associate Justices of the Supreme Court, and of judges of lower courts shall be fixed by law. During their continuance in office, their salary shall not be decreased.

SECTION 11. The Members of the Supreme Court and judges of lower courts shall hold office during good behavior until they reached the age of seventy years or become incapacitated to discharge the duties of their office. The Supreme Court en banc shall have the power to discipline judges of lower courts, or order their dismissal by a vote of a majority of the Members who actually took part in the deliberations on the issues in the case and voted thereon.

SECTION 12. The Members of the Supreme Court and of other courts established by law shall not be designated to any agency performing quasi-judicial or administrative functions.

SECTION 13. The conclusions of the Supreme Court in any case submitted to it for decision en banc or in division shall be reached in consultation before the case is assigned to a Member for the writing of the opinion of the Court. A certification to this effect signed by the Chief Justice shall be issued and a copy thereof attached to the record of the case and served upon the parties. Any Member who took

no part, or dissented, or abstained from a decision or resolution must state the reason therefor. The same requirements shall be observed by all lower collegiate courts.

SECTION 14. No decision shall be rendered by any court without expressing therein clearly and distinctly the facts and the law on which it is based.

No petition for review or motion for reconsideration of a decision of the court shall be refused due course or denied without stating the legal basis therefor.

SECTION 15. (1) All cases or matters filed after the effectivity of this Constitution must be decided or resolved within twenty-four months from date of submission for the Supreme Court, and, unless reduced by the Supreme Court, twelve months for all lower collegiate courts, and three months for all other lower courts.

(2) A case or matter shall be deemed submitted for decision or resolution upon the filing of the last pending, brief, or memorandum required by the Rules of Court or by the court itself.

(3) Upon the expiration of the corresponding period, a certification to this effect signed by the Chief Justice or the presiding judge shall forthwith be issued and a copy thereof attached to the record of the case or matter, and served upon the parties. The certification shall state why a decision or resolution has not been rendered or issued within said period.

(4) Despite the expiration of the applicable mandatory period, the court, without prejudice to such responsibility as may have been incurred in consequence thereof, shall decide or resolve the case or matter submitted thereto for determination, without further delay.

SECTION 16. The Supreme Court shall, within thirty days from the opening of each regular session of the Congress, submit to the President and the Congress an annual report on the operations and activities of the Judiciary.

ARTICLE IX

Constitutional Commissions

A. Common Provisions

SECTION 1. The Constitutional Commissions, which shall be independent, are the Civil Service Commission, the Commission on Elections, and the Commission on Audit.

SECTION 2. No Member of a Constitutional Commission shall, during his tenure, hold any other office or employment. Neither shall he engage in the practice of any profession or in the active management or control of any business which in

any way be affected by the functions of his office, nor shall he be financially interested, directly or indirectly, in any contract with, or in any franchise or privilege granted by the Government, any of its subdivisions, agencies, or instrumentalities, including government-owned or controlled corporations or their subsidiaries.

- SECTION 3.** The salary of the Chairman and the Commissioners shall be fixed by law and shall not be decreased during their tenure.
- SECTION 4.** The Constitutional Commissions shall appoint their officials and employees in accordance with law.
- SECTION 5.** The Commission shall enjoy fiscal autonomy. Their approved annual appropriations shall be automatically and regularly released.
- SECTION 6.** Each Commission en banc may promulgate its own rules concerning pleadings and practice before it or before any of its offices. Such rules however shall not diminish, increase, or modify substantive rights.
- SECTION 7.** Each Commission shall decide by a majority vote of all its Members any case or matter brought before it within sixty days from the date of its submission for decision or resolution. A case or matter is deemed submitted for decision or resolution upon the filing of the last pleading, brief, or memorandum required by the rules of the Commission or by the Commission itself. Unless otherwise provided by this Constitution or by law, any decision, order, or ruling of each Commission may be brought to the Supreme Court on certiorari by the aggrieved party within thirty days from receipt of a copy thereof.
- SECTION 8.** Each Commission shall perform such other functions as may be provided by law.

B. The Civil Service Commission

- SECTION 1.** (1) The Civil Service shall be administered by the Civil Service Commission composed of a Chairman and two Commissioners who shall be natural-born citizens of the Philippines and, at the time of their appointment, at least thirty-five years of age, with proven capacity for public administration, and must not have been candidates for any elective position in the elections immediately preceding their appointment.
- (2) The Chairman and the Commissioners shall be appointed by the President with the consent of the Commission on Appointments for a term of seven years without reappointment. Of those first appointed, the Chairman shall hold office for seven years, a Commissioner for five years, and another Commissioner for three years, without reappointment. Appointment to any vacancy shall be only for the unexpired term of the predecessor.

In no case shall any Member be appointed or designated in a temporary or acting capacity.

- SECTION 2.** (1) The civil service embraces all branches, subdivisions, instrumentalities, and agencies of the Government, including government-owned or controlled corporations with original charters.
- (2) Appointments in the civil service shall be made only according to merit and fitness to be determined, as far as practicable, and, except to positions which are policy-determining, primarily confidential, or highly technical, by competitive examination.
- (3) No officer or employee of the civil service shall be removed or suspended except for cause provided by law.
- (4) No officer or employee in the civil service shall engage, directly or indirectly, in any electioneering or partisan political campaign.
- (5) The right to self-organization shall not be denied to government employees.
- (6) Temporary employees of the Government shall be given such protection as may be provided by law.

SECTION 3. The Civil Service Commission, as the central personnel agency of the Government, shall establish a career service and adopt measures to promote morale, efficiency, integrity, responsiveness, progressiveness, and courtesy in the civil service. It shall strengthen the merit and rewards system, integrate all human resources development programs for all levels and ranks, and institutionalize a management climate conducive to public accountability. It shall submit to the President and the Congress an annual report on its personnel programs.

SECTION 4. All public officers and employees shall take an oath or affirmation to uphold and defend this Constitution.

SECTION 5. The Congress shall provide for the standardization of compensation of government officials and employees, including those in government-owned or controlled corporations with original charters, taking into account the nature of the responsibilities pertaining to, and the qualifications required for their positions.

SECTION 6. No candidate who has lost in any election shall, within one year after such election, be appointed to any office in the Government or any government-owned or controlled corporations or in any of their subsidiaries.

SECTION 7. No elective official shall be eligible for appointment or designation in any capacity to any public office or position during his tenure.

Unless otherwise allowed by law or by the primary functions of his position, no appointive official shall hold any other office or employment in the Government or any subdivision, agency or instrumentality thereof, including government-owned or controlled corporations or their subsidiaries.

SECTION 8. No elective or appointive public officer or employee shall receive additional, double, or indirect compensation, unless specifically authorized by law, nor accept without the consent of the Congress, any present, emolument, office, or title of any kind from any foreign government.

Pensions or gratuities shall not be considered as additional, double, or indirect compensation.

C. The Commission on Elections

SECTION 1. (1) There shall be a Commission on Elections composed of a Chairman and six Commissioners who shall be natural-born citizens of the Philippines and, at the time of their appointment, at least thirty-five years of age, holders of a college degree, and must not have been candidates for any elective position in the immediately preceding elections. However, a majority thereof, including the Chairman, shall be Members of the Philippine Bar who have been engaged in the practice of law for at least ten years.

(2) The Chairman and the Commissioners shall be appointed by the President with the consent of the Commission on Appointments for a term of seven years without reappointment. Of those first appointed, three Members shall hold office for seven years, two Members for five years, and the last Members for three years, without reappointment. Appointment to any vacancy shall be only for the unexpired term of the predecessor. In no case shall any Member be appointed or designated in a temporary or acting capacity.

SECTION 2. The Commission on Elections shall exercise the following powers and functions:

(1) Enforce and administer all laws and regulations relative to the conduct of an election, plebiscite, initiative, referendum, and recall.

(2) Exercise exclusive original jurisdiction over all contests relating to the elections, returns, and qualifications of all elective regional, provincial, and city officials, and appellate jurisdiction over all contests involving elective municipal officials decided by trial courts of general jurisdiction, or involving elective barangay officials decided by trial courts of limited jurisdiction.

Decisions, final orders, or rulings of the Commission on election contests involving elective municipal and barangay offices shall be final, executory, and not appealable.

- (3) Decide, except those involving the right to vote, all questions affecting elections, including determination of the number and location of polling places, appointment of election officials and inspectors, and registration of voters.
- (4) Deputize, with the concurrence of the President, law enforcement agencies and instrumentalities of the Government, including the Armed Forces of the Philippines, for the exclusive purpose of ensuring free, orderly, honest, peaceful, and credible elections.
- (5) Register, after sufficient publication, political parties, organizations, or coalitions which, in addition to other requirements, must present their platform or program of government; and accredit citizens' arms of the Commission on Elections. Religious denominations and sects shall not be registered. Those which seek to achieve their goals through violence or unlawful means, or refuse to uphold and adhere to this Constitution, or which are supported by any foreign government shall likewise be refused registration.

Financial contributions from foreign governments and their agencies to political parties, organizations, coalitions, or candidates related to elections constitute interference in national affairs, and, when accepted, shall be an additional ground for the cancellation of their registration with the Commission, in addition to other penalties that may be prescribed by law.

- (6) File, upon a verified complaint, or on its own initiative, petitions in court for inclusion or exclusion of voters; investigate and, where appropriate, prosecute cases of violations of election laws, including acts or omissions constituting election frauds, offenses, and malpractices.
- (7) Recommend to the Congress effective measures to minimize election spending, including limitation of places where propaganda materials shall be posted, and to prevent and penalize all forms of election frauds, offenses, malpractices, and nuisance candidacies.
- (8) Recommend to the President the removal of any officer or employee it has deputized, or the imposition of any other disciplinary action, for violation or disregard of, or disobedience to its directive, order, or decision.
- (9) Submit to the President and the Congress a comprehensive report on the conduct of each election, plebiscite, initiative, referendum, or recall.

- SECTION 3.** The Commission on Elections may sit en banc or in two divisions, and shall promulgate its rules of procedure in order to expedite disposition of election cases, including pre-proclamation controversies. All such election cases shall be heard and decided in division, provided that motions for reconsideration of decisions shall be decided by the Commission en banc.
- SECTION 4.** The Commission may, during the election period, supervise or regulate the enjoyment or utilization of all franchises or permits for the operation of transportation and other public utilities, media of communication or information, all grants, special privileges, or concessions granted by the Government or any subdivision, agency, or instrumentality thereof, including any government-owned or controlled corporation or its subsidiary. Such supervision or regulation shall aim to ensure equal opportunity, time, and space, and the right to reply, including reasonable, equal rates therefor, for public information campaigns and forums among candidates in connection with the objective of holding free, orderly, honest, peaceful, and credible elections.
- SECTION 5.** No pardon, amnesty, parole, or suspension of sentence for violation of election laws, rules, and regulations shall be granted by the President without the favorable recommendation of the Commission.
- SECTION 6.** A free and open party system shall be allowed to evolve according to the free choice of the people, subject to the provisions of this Article.
- SECTION 7.** No votes cast in favor of a political party, organization, or coalition shall be valid, except for those registered under the party-list system as provided in this Constitution.
- SECTION 8.** Political parties, or organizations or coalitions registered under the party-list system, shall not be represented in the voters' registration boards, boards of election inspectors, boards of canvassers, or other similar bodies. However, they shall be entitled to appoint poll watchers in accordance with law.
- SECTION 9.** Unless otherwise fixed by the Commission in special cases, the election period shall commence ninety days before the day of the election and shall end thirty days after.
- SECTION 10.** Bona fide candidates for any public office shall be free from any form of harassment and discrimination.
- SECTION 11.** Funds certified by the Commission as necessary to defray the expenses for holding regular and special elections, plebiscites, initiatives, referenda, and recalls, shall be provided in the regular or special appropriations and, once

approved, shall be released automatically upon certification by the Chairman of the Commission.

D. Commission on Audit

- SECTION 1.** (1) There shall be a Commission on Audit composed of a Chairman and two Commissioners, who shall be natural-born citizens of the Philippines and, at the time of their appointment, at least thirty-five years of age, certified public accountants with not less than ten years of auditing experience, or members of the Philippine Bar who have been engaged in the practice of law for at least ten years, and must not have been candidates for any elective position in the elections immediately preceding their appointment. At no time shall all Members of the Commission belong to the same profession.
- (2) The Chairman and the Commissioners shall be appointed by the President with the consent of the Commission on Appointments for a term of seven years without reappointment. Of those first appointed, the Chairman shall hold office for seven years, one Commissioner for five years, and the other Commissioner for three years, without reappointment. Appointment to any vacancy shall be only for the unexpired portion of the term of the predecessor. In no case shall any Member be appointed or designated in a temporary or acting capacity.
- SECTION 2.** (1) The Commission on Audit shall have the power, authority, and duty to examine, audit, and settle all accounts pertaining to the revenue and receipts of, and expenditures or uses of funds and property, owned or held in trust by, or pertaining to, the Government, or any of its subdivisions, agencies, or instrumentalities, including government-owned or controlled corporations with original charters, and on a post-audit basis: (a) constitutional bodies, commissions and offices that have been granted fiscal autonomy under this Constitution; (b) autonomous state colleges and universities; (c) other government-owned or controlled corporations and their subsidiaries; and (d) such non-governmental entities receiving subsidy or equity, directly or indirectly, from or through the Government, which are required by law or the granting institution to submit to such audit as a condition of subsidy or equity. However, where the internal control system of the audited agencies is inadequate, the Commission may adopt such measures, including temporary or special pre-audit, as are necessary and appropriate to correct the deficiencies. It shall keep the general accounts of the Government and, for such period as may be provided by law, preserve the vouchers and other supporting papers pertaining thereto.

(2) The Commission shall have exclusive authority, subject to the limitations in this Article, to define the scope of its audit and examination, establish the techniques and methods required therefor, and promulgate accounting and auditing rules and regulations, including those for the prevention and disallowance of irregular, unnecessary, excessive, extravagant, or unconscionable expenditures, or uses of government funds and properties.

SECTION 3. No law shall be passed exempting any entity of the Government or its subsidiary in any guise whatever, or any investment of public funds, from the jurisdiction of the Commission on Audit.

SECTION 4. The Commission shall submit to the President and the Congress, within the time fixed by law, an annual report covering the financial condition and operation of the Government, its subdivisions, agencies, and instrumentalities, including government-owned or controlled corporations, and non-governmental entities subject to its audit, and recommend measures necessary to improve their effectiveness and efficiency. It shall submit such other reports as may be required by law.

ARTICLE X

Local Government

General Provisions

SECTION 1. The territorial and political subdivisions of the Republic of the Philippines are the provinces, cities, municipalities, and barangays. There shall be autonomous regions in Muslim Mindanao and the Cordilleras as hereinafter provided.

SECTION 2. The territorial and political subdivisions shall enjoy local autonomy.

SECTION 3. The Congress shall enact a local government code which shall provide for a more responsive and accountable local government structure instituted through a system of decentralization with effective mechanisms of recall, initiative, and referendum, allocate among the different local government units their powers, responsibilities, and resources, and provide for the qualifications, election, appointment and removal, term, salaries, powers and functions and duties of local officials, and all other matters relating to the organization and operation of the local units.

SECTION 4. The President of the Philippines shall exercise general supervision over local governments. Provinces with respect to component cities and municipalities, and cities and municipalities with respect to component barangays shall ensure that the acts of their component units are within the scope of their prescribed powers and functions.

- SECTION 5.** Each local government unit shall have the power to create its own sources of revenues and to levy taxes, fees, and charges subject to such guidelines and limitations as the Congress may provide, consistent with the basic policy of local autonomy. Such taxes, fees, and charges shall accrue exclusively to the local governments.
- SECTION 6.** Local government units shall have a just share, as determined by law, in the national taxes which shall be automatically released to them.
- SECTION 7.** Local governments shall be entitled to an equitable share in the proceeds of the utilization and development of the national wealth within their respective areas, in the manner provided by law, including sharing the same with the inhabitants by way of direct benefits.
- SECTION 8.** The term of office of elective local officials, except barangay officials, which shall be determined by law, shall be three years and no such official shall serve for more than three consecutive terms. Voluntary renunciation of the office for any length of time shall not be considered as an interruption in the continuity of his service for the full term for which he was elected.
- SECTION 9.** Legislative bodies of local governments shall have sectoral representation as may be prescribed by law.
- SECTION 10.** No province, city, municipality, or barangay may be created, divided, merged, abolished, or its boundary substantially altered, except in accordance with the criteria established in the Local Government Code and subject to approval by a majority of the votes cast in a plebiscite in the political units directly affected.
- SECTION 11.** The Congress may, by law, create special metropolitan political subdivisions, subject to a plebiscite as set forth in Section 10 hereof. The component cities and municipalities shall retain their basic autonomy and shall be entitled to their own local executives and legislative assemblies. The jurisdiction of the metropolitan authority that will hereby be created shall be limited to basic services requiring coordination.
- SECTION 12.** Cities that are highly urbanized, as determined by law, and component cities whose charters prohibit their voters from voting for provincial elective officials, shall be independent of the province. The voters of component cities within a province, whose charters contain no such prohibition, shall not be deprived of their right to vote for elective provincial officials.
- SECTION 13.** Local government units may group themselves, consolidate or coordinate their efforts, services, and resources for purposes commonly beneficial to them in accordance with law.

SECTION 14. The President shall provide for regional development councils or other similar bodies composed of local government officials, regional heads of departments and other government offices, and representatives from non-governmental organizations within the regions for purposes of administrative decentralization to strengthen the autonomy of the units therein and to accelerate the economic and social growth and development of the units in the region.

Autonomous Region

SECTION 15. There shall be created autonomous regions in Muslim Mindanao and in the Cordilleras consisting of provinces, cities, municipalities, and geographical areas sharing common and distinctive historical and cultural heritage, economic and social structures, and other relevant characteristics within the framework of this Constitution and the national sovereignty as well as territorial integrity of the Republic of the Philippines.

SECTION 16. The President shall exercise general supervision over autonomous regions to ensure that the laws are faithfully executed.

SECTION 17. All powers, functions, and responsibilities not granted by this Constitution or by law to the autonomous regions shall be vested in the National Government.

SECTION 18. The Congress shall enact an organic act for each autonomous region with the assistance and participation of the regional consultative commission composed of representatives appointed by the President from a list of nominees from multisectoral bodies. The organic act shall define the basic structure of government for the region consisting of the executive department and legislative assembly, both of which shall be elective and representative of the constituent political units. The organic acts shall likewise provide for special courts with personal, family, and property law jurisdiction consistent with the provisions of this Constitution and national laws.

The creation of the autonomous region shall be effective when approved by majority of the votes cast by the constituent units in a plebiscite called for the purpose, provided that only provinces, cities, and geographic areas voting favorably in such plebiscite shall be included in the autonomous region.

SECTION 19. The first Congress elected under this Constitution shall, within eighteen months from the time of organization of both Houses, pass the organic acts for the autonomous regions in Muslim Mindanao and the Cordilleras.

SECTION 20. Within its territorial jurisdiction and subject to the provisions of this Constitution and national laws, the organic act of autonomous regions shall provide for legislative powers over:

- (1) Administrative organization;
- (2) Creation of sources of revenues;
- (3) Ancestral domain and natural resources;
- (4) Personal, family, and property relations;
- (5) Regional urban and rural planning development;
- (6) Economic, social, and tourism development;
- (7) Educational policies;
- (8) Preservation and development of the cultural heritage; and
- (9) Such other matters as may be authorized by law for the promotion of the general welfare of the people of the region.

SECTION 21. The preservation of peace and order within the regions shall be the responsibility of the local police agencies which shall be organized, maintained, supervised, and utilized in accordance with applicable laws. The defense and security of the regions shall be the responsibility of the National Government.

ARTICLE XI

Accountability of Public Officers

SECTION 1. Public office is a public trust. Public officers and employees must at all times be accountable to the people, serve them with utmost responsibility, integrity, loyalty, and efficiency, act with patriotism and justice, and lead modest lives.

SECTION 2. The President, the Vice-President, the Members of the Supreme Court, the Members of the Constitutional Commissions, and the Ombudsman may be removed from office, on impeachment for, and conviction of, culpable violation of the Constitution, treason, bribery, graft and corruption, other high crimes, or betrayal of public trust. All other public officers and employees may be removed from office as provided by law, but not by impeachment.

SECTION 3. (1) The House of Representatives shall have the exclusive power to initiate all cases of impeachment.

(2) A verified complaint for impeachment may be filed by any Member of the House of Representatives or by any citizen upon a resolution of endorsement by any Member thereof, which shall be included in the Order of Business within ten session days, and referred to the proper Committee within three session days thereafter. The Committee, after hearing, and by a majority vote of all its Members, shall submit its report

to the House within sixty session days from such referral, together with the corresponding resolution. The resolution shall be calendared for consideration by the House within ten session days from receipt thereof.

- (3) A vote of at least one-third of all the Members of the House shall be necessary either to affirm a favorable resolution with the Articles of Impeachment of the Committee, or override its contrary resolution. The vote of each Member shall be recorded.
- (4) In case the verified complaint or resolution of impeachment is filed by at least one-third of all the Members of the House, the same shall constitute the Articles of Impeachment, and trial by the Senate shall forthwith proceed.
- (5) No impeachment proceedings shall be initiated against the same official more than once within a period of one year.
- (6) The Senate shall have the sole power to try and decide all cases of impeachment. When sitting for that purpose, the Senators shall be on oath or affirmation. When the President of the Philippines is on trial, the Chief Justice of the Supreme Court shall preside, but shall not vote. No person shall be convicted without the concurrence of two-thirds of all the Members of the Senate.
- (7) Judgment in cases of impeachment shall not extend further than removal from office and disqualification to hold any office under the Republic of the Philippines, but the party convicted shall nevertheless be liable and subject to prosecution, trial, and punishment according to law.
- (8) The Congress shall promulgate its rules on impeachment to effectively carry out the purpose of this section.

SECTION 4. The present anti-graft court known as the Sandiganbayan shall continue to function and exercise its jurisdiction as now or hereafter may be provided by law.

SECTION 5. There is hereby created the independent Office of the Ombudsman, composed of the Ombudsman to be known as Tanodbayan, one overall Deputy and at least one Deputy each for Luzon, Visayas, and Mindanao. A separate Deputy for the military establishment may likewise be appointed.

SECTION 6. The officials and employees of the Office of the Ombudsman, other than the Deputies, shall be appointed by the Ombudsman according to the Civil Service Law.

SECTION 7. The existing Tanodbayan shall hereafter be known as the Office of the Special Prosecutor. It shall continue to function and exercise its powers as now or

hereafter may be provided by law, except those conferred on the Office of the Ombudsman created under this Constitution.

SECTION 8. The Ombudsman and his Deputies shall be natural-born citizens of the Philippines, and at the time of their appointment, at least forty years old, of recognized probity and independence, and members of the Philippine Bar, and must not have been candidates for any elective office in the immediately preceding election. The Ombudsman must have for ten years or more been a judge or engaged in the practice of law in the Philippines.

During their tenure, they shall be subject to the same disqualifications and prohibitions as provided for in Section 2 of Article IX-A of this Constitution.

SECTION 9. The Ombudsman and his Deputies shall be appointed by the President from a list of at least six nominees prepared by the Judicial and Bar Council, and from a list of three nominees for every vacancy thereafter. Such appointments shall require no confirmation. All vacancies shall be filled within three months after they occur.

SECTION 10. The Ombudsman and his Deputies shall have the rank of Chairman and Members, respectively, of the Constitutional Commissions, and they shall receive the same salary, which shall not be decreased during their term of office.

SECTION 11. The Ombudsman and his Deputies shall serve for a term of seven years without reappointment. They shall not be qualified to run for any office in the election immediately succeeding their cessation from office.

SECTION 12. The Ombudsman and his Deputies, as protectors of the people, shall act promptly on complaints filed in any form or manner against public officials or employees of the Government, or any subdivision, agency or instrumentality thereof, including government-owned or controlled corporations, and shall, in appropriate cases, notify the complainants of the action taken and the result thereof.

SECTION 13. The Office of the Ombudsman shall have the following powers, functions, and duties:

- (1) Investigate on its own, or on complaint by any person, any act or omission of any public official, employee, office or agency, when such act or omission appears to be illegal, unjust, improper, or inefficient.
- (2) Direct, upon complaint or at its own instance, any public official or employee of the Government, or any subdivision, agency or instrumentality thereof, as well as of any government-owned or controlled corporation with original charter, to perform and expedite any act or duty required

by law, or to stop, prevent, and correct any abuse or impropriety in the performance of duties.

- (3) Direct the officer concerned to take appropriate action against a public official or employee at fault, and recommend his removal, suspension, demotion, fine, censure, or prosecution, and ensure compliance therewith.
- (4) Direct the officer concerned, in any appropriate case, and subject to such limitations as may be provided by law, to furnish it with copies of documents relating to contracts or transactions entered into by his office involving the disbursement or use of public funds or properties, and report any irregularity to the Commission on Audit for appropriate action.
- (5) Request any government agency for assistance and information necessary in the discharge of its responsibilities, and to examine, if necessary, pertinent records and documents.
- (6) Publicize matters covered by its investigation when circumstances so warrant and with due prudence.
- (7) Determine the causes of inefficiency, red tape, mismanagement, fraud, and corruption in the Government and make recommendations for their elimination and the observance of high standards of ethics and efficiency.
- (8) Promulgate its rules of procedure and exercise such other powers or perform such functions or duties as may be provided by law.

SECTION 14. The Office of the Ombudsman shall enjoy fiscal autonomy. Its approved annual appropriations shall be automatically and regularly released.

SECTION 15. The right of the State to recover properties unlawfully acquired by public officials or employees, from them or from their nominees or transferees, shall not be barred by prescription, laches, or estoppel.

SECTION 16. No loan, guaranty, or other form of financial accommodation for any business purpose may be granted, directly or indirectly, by any government-owned or controlled bank or financial institution to the President, the Vice-President, the Members of the Cabinet, the Congress, the Supreme Court, and the Constitutional Commissions, the Ombudsman, or to any firm or entity in which they have controlling interest, during their tenure.

SECTION 17. A public officer or employee shall, upon assumption of office and as often thereafter as may be required by law, submit a declaration under oath of his assets, liabilities, and net worth. In the case of the President, the Vice-President, the Members of the Cabinet, the Congress, the Supreme Court, the Constitutional Commissions and other constitutional offices, and officers of

the armed forces with general or flag rank, the declaration shall be disclosed to the public in the manner provided by law.

SECTION 18. Public officers and employees owe the State and this Constitution allegiance at all times, and any public officer or employee who seeks to change his citizenship or acquire the status of an immigrant of another country during his tenure shall be dealt with by law.

ARTICLE XII

National Economy and Patrimony

SECTION 1. The goals of the national economy are a more equitable distribution of opportunities, income, and wealth; a sustained increase in the amount of goods and services produced by the nation for the benefit of the people; and an expanding productivity as the key to raising the quality of life for all, especially the underprivileged.

The State shall promote industrialization and full employment based on sound agricultural development and agrarian reform, through industries that make full and efficient use of human and natural resources, and which are competitive in both domestic and foreign markets. However, the State shall protect Filipino enterprises against unfair foreign competition and trade practices.

In the pursuit of these goals, all sectors of the economy and all regions of the country shall be given optimum opportunity to develop. Private enterprises, including corporations, cooperatives, and similar collective organizations, shall be encouraged to broaden the base of their ownership.

SECTION 2. All lands of the public domain, waters, minerals, coal, petroleum, and other mineral oils, all forces of potential energy, fisheries, forests or timber, wildlife, flora and fauna, and other natural resources are owned by the State. With the exception of agricultural lands, all other natural resources shall not be alienated. The exploration, development, and utilization of natural resources shall be under the full control and supervision of the State. The State may directly undertake such activities, or it may enter into co-production, joint venture, or production-sharing agreements with Filipino citizens, or corporations or associations at least sixty per centum of whose capital is owned by such citizens. Such agreements may be for a period not exceeding twenty-five years, renewable for not more than twenty-five years, and under such terms and conditions as may be provided by law. In cases of water rights for irrigation, water supply, fisheries, or industrial uses other than the development of water power, beneficial use may be the measure and limit of the grant.

The State shall protect the nation's marine wealth in its archipelagic waters, territorial sea, and exclusive economic zone, and reserve its use and enjoyment exclusively to Filipino citizens.

The Congress may, by law, allow small-scale utilization of natural resources by Filipino citizens, as well as cooperative fish farming, with priority to subsistence fishermen and fishworkers in rivers, lakes, bays, and lagoons.

The President may enter into agreements with foreign-owned corporations involving either technical or financial assistance for large-scale exploration, development, and utilization of minerals, petroleum, and other mineral oils according to the general terms and conditions provided by law, based on real contributions to the economic growth and general welfare of the country. In such agreements, the State shall promote the development and use of local scientific and technical resources.

The President shall notify the Congress of every contract entered into in accordance with this provision, within thirty days from its execution.

SECTION 3. Lands of the public domain are classified into agricultural, forest or timber, mineral lands, and national parks. Agricultural lands of the public domain may be further classified by law according to the uses which they may be devoted. Alienable lands of the public domain shall be limited to agricultural lands. Private corporations or associations may not hold such alienable lands of the public domain except by lease, for a period not exceeding twenty-five years, renewable for not more than twenty-five years, and not to exceed one thousand hectares in area. Citizens of the Philippines may lease not more than five hundred hectares, or acquire not more than twelve hectares thereof by purchase, homestead, or grant.

Taking into account the requirements of conservation, ecology, and development, and subject to the requirements of agrarian reform, the Congress shall determine, by law, the size of lands of the public domain which may be acquired, developed, held, or leased and the conditions therefor.

SECTION 4. The Congress shall, as soon as possible, determine by law the specific limits of forest lands and national parks, marking clearly their boundaries on the ground. Thereafter, such forest lands and national parks shall be conserved and may not be increased nor diminished, except by law. The Congress shall provide, for such period as it may determine, measures to prohibit logging in endangered forests and watershed areas.

SECTION 5. The State, subject to the provisions of this Constitution and national development policies and programs, shall protect the rights of indigenous cultural communities to their ancestral lands to ensure their economic, social, and cultural well-being.

The Congress may provide for the applicability of customary laws governing property rights or relations in determining the ownership and extent of ancestral domain.

SECTION 6. The use of property bears a social function, and all economic agents shall contribute to the common good. Individuals and private groups, including corporations, cooperatives, and similar collective organizations, shall have the right to own, establish, and operate economic enterprises, subject to the duty of the State to promote distributive justice and to intervene when the common good so demands.

SECTION 7. Save in cases of hereditary succession, no private lands shall be transferred or conveyed except to individuals, corporations, or associations qualified to acquire or hold lands of the public domain.

SECTION 8. Notwithstanding the provisions of Section 7 of this Article, a natural-born citizen of the Philippines who has lost his Philippine citizenship may be a transferee of private lands, subject to limitations provided by law.

SECTION 9. The Congress may establish an independent economic and planning agency headed by the President, which shall, after consultations with the appropriate public agencies, various private sectors, and local government units, recommend to Congress, and implement continuing integrated and coordinated programs and policies for national development.

Until the Congress provides otherwise, the National Economic and Development Authority shall function as the independent planning agency of the government.

SECTION 10. The Congress shall, upon recommendation of the economic and planning agency, when the national interest dictates, reserve to citizens of the Philippines or to corporations or associations at least sixty per centum of whose capital is owned by such citizens, or such higher percentage as Congress may prescribe, certain areas of investments. The Congress shall enact measures that will encourage the formation and operation of enterprises whose capital is wholly owned by Filipinos.

In the grant of rights, privileges, and concessions covering the national economy and patrimony, the State shall give preference to qualified Filipinos.

The State shall regulate and exercise authority over foreign investments within its national jurisdiction and in accordance with its national goals and priorities.

SECTION 11. No franchise, certificate, or any other form of authorization for the operation of a public utility shall be granted except to citizens of the Philippines or to

corporations or associations organized under the laws of the Philippines at least sixty per centum of whose capital is owned by such citizens, nor shall such franchise, certificate, or authorization be exclusive in character or for a longer period than fifty years. Neither shall any such franchise or right be granted except under the condition that it shall be subject to amendment, alteration, or repeal by the Congress when the common good so requires. The State shall encourage equity participation in public utilities by the general public. The participation of foreign investors in the governing body of any public utility enterprise shall be limited to their proportionate share in its capital, and all the executive and managing officers of such corporation or association must be citizens of the Philippines.

SECTION 12. The State shall promote the preferential use of Filipino labor, domestic materials and locally produced goods, and adopt measures that help make them competitive.

SECTION 13. The State shall pursue a trade policy that serves the general welfare and utilizes all forms and arrangements of exchange on the basis of equality and reciprocity.

SECTION 14. The sustained development of a reservoir of national talents consisting of Filipino scientists, entrepreneurs, professionals, managers, high-level technical manpower and skilled workers and craftsmen in all fields shall be promoted by the State. The State shall encourage appropriate technology and regulate its transfer for the national benefit.

The practice of all professions in the Philippines shall be limited to Filipino citizens, save in cases prescribed by law.

SECTION 15. The Congress shall create an agency to promote the viability and growth of cooperatives as instruments for social justice and economic development.

SECTION 16. The Congress shall not, except by general law, provide for the formation, organization, or regulation of private corporations. Government-owned or controlled corporations may be created or established by special charters in the interest of the common good and subject to the test of economic viability.

SECTION 17. In times of national emergency, when the public interest so requires, the State may, during the emergency and under reasonable terms prescribed by it, temporarily take over or direct the operation of any privately owned public utility or business affected with public interest.

SECTION 18. The State may, in the interest of national welfare or defense, establish and operate vital industries and, upon payment of just compensation, transfer to public ownership utilities and other private enterprises to be operated by the Government.

SECTION 19. The State shall regulate or prohibit monopolies when the public interest so requires. No combinations in restraint of trade or unfair competition shall be allowed.

SECTION 20. The Congress shall establish an independent central monetary authority, the members of whose governing board must be natural-born Filipino citizens, of known probity, integrity, and patriotism, the majority of whom shall come from the private sector. They shall also be subject to such other qualifications and disabilities as may be prescribed by law. The authority shall provide policy direction in the areas of money, banking, and credit. It shall have supervision over the operations of banks and exercise such regulatory powers as may be provided by law over the operations of finance companies and other institutions performing similar functions.

Until the Congress otherwise provides, the Central Bank of the Philippines, operating under existing laws, shall function as the central monetary authority.

SECTION 21. Foreign loans may only be incurred in accordance with law and the regulation of the monetary authority. Information on foreign loans obtained or guaranteed by the Government shall be made available to the public.

SECTION 22. Acts which circumvent or negate any of the provisions of this Article shall be considered inimical to the national interest and subject to criminal and civil sanctions, as may be provided by law.

ARTICLE XIII

Social Justice and Human Rights

SECTION 1. The Congress shall give highest priority to the enactment of measures that protect and enhance the right of all the people to human dignity, reduce social, economic, and political inequalities, and remove cultural inequities by equitably diffusing wealth and political power for the common good.

To this end, the State shall regulate the acquisition, ownership, use, and disposition of property and its increments.

SECTION 2. The promotion of social justice shall include the commitment to create economic opportunities based on freedom of initiative and self-reliance.

Labor

SECTION 3. The State shall afford full protection to labor, local and overseas, organized and unorganized, and promote full employment and equality of employment opportunities for all.

It shall guarantee the rights of all workers to self-organization, collective bargaining and negotiations, and peaceful concerted activities, including the right to strike in accordance with law. They shall be entitled to security of tenure, humane conditions of work, and a living wage. They shall also participate in policy and decision-making processes affecting their rights and benefits as may be provided by law.

The State shall promote the principle of shared responsibility between workers and employers and the preferential use of voluntary modes in settling disputes, including conciliation, and shall enforce their mutual compliance therewith to foster industrial peace.

The State shall regulate the relations between workers and employers, recognizing the right of labor to its just share in the fruits of production and the right of enterprises to reasonable returns on investments, and to expansion and growth.

Agrarian and Natural Resources Reform

- SECTION 4.** The State shall, by law, undertake an agrarian reform program founded on the right of farmers and regular farmworkers, who are landless, to own directly or collectively the lands they till or, in the case of other farmworkers, to receive a just share of the fruits thereof. To this end, the State shall encourage and undertake the just distribution of all agricultural lands, subject to such priorities and reasonable retention limits as the Congress may prescribe, taking into account ecological, developmental, or equity considerations, and subject to the payment of just compensation. In determining retention limits, the State shall respect the right of small landowners. The State shall further provide incentives for voluntary land-sharing.
- SECTION 5.** The State shall recognize the right of farmers, farmworkers, and landowners, as well as cooperatives, and other independent farmers' organizations to participate in the planning, organization, and management of the program, and shall provide support to agriculture through appropriate technology and research, and adequate financial, production, marketing, and other support services.
- SECTION 6.** The State shall apply the principles of agrarian reform or stewardship, whenever applicable in accordance with law, in the disposition or utilization of other natural resources, including lands of the public domain under lease or concession suitable to agriculture, subject to prior rights, homestead rights of small settlers, and the rights of indigenous communities to their ancestral lands.

The State may resettle landless farmers and farmworkers in its own agricultural estates which shall be distributed to them in the manner provided by law.

SECTION 7. The State shall protect the rights of subsistence fishermen, especially of local communities, to the preferential use of local marine and fishing resources, both inland and offshore. It shall provide support to such fishermen through appropriate technology and research, adequate financial, production, and marketing assistance, and other services. The State shall also protect, develop, and conserve such resources. The protection shall extend to offshore fishing grounds of subsistence fishermen against foreign intrusion. Fishworkers shall receive a just share from their labor in the utilization of marine and fishing resources.

SECTION 8. The State shall provide incentives to landowners to invest the proceeds of the agrarian reform program to promote industrialization, employment creation, and privatization of public sector enterprises. Financial instruments used as payment for their lands shall be honored as equity in enterprises of their choice.

Urban Land Reform and Housing

SECTION 9. The State shall, by law, and for the common good, undertake, in cooperation with the public sector, a continuing program of urban land reform and housing which will make available at affordable cost decent housing and basic services to underprivileged and homeless citizens in urban centers and resettlements areas. It shall also promote adequate employment opportunities to such citizens. In the implementation of such program the State shall respect the rights of small property owners.

SECTION 10. Urban or rural poor dwellers shall not be evicted nor their dwellings demolished, except in accordance with law and in a just and humane manner.

No resettlement of urban or rural dwellers shall be undertaken without adequate consultation with them and the communities where they are to be relocated.

Health

SECTION 11. The State shall adopt an integrated and comprehensive approach to health development which shall endeavor to make essential goods, health and other social services available to all the people at affordable cost. There shall be priority for the needs of the underprivileged sick, elderly, disabled, women, and children. The State shall endeavor to provide free medical care to paupers.

SECTION 12. The State shall establish and maintain an effective food and drug regulatory system and undertake appropriate health manpower development and research, responsive to the country's health needs and problems.

SECTION 13. The State shall establish a special agency for disabled persons for rehabilitation, self-development and self-reliance, and their integration into the mainstream of society.

Women

SECTION 14. The State shall protect working women by providing safe and healthful working conditions, taking into account their maternal functions, and such facilities and opportunities that will enhance their welfare and enable them to realize their full potential in the service of the nation.

Role and Rights of People's Organizations

SECTION 15. The State shall respect the role of independent people's organizations to enable the people to pursue and protect, within the democratic framework, their legitimate and collective interests and aspirations through peaceful and lawful means.

People's organizations are bona fide associations of citizens with demonstrated capacity to promote the public interest and with identifiable leadership, membership, and structure.

SECTION 16. The right of the people and their organizations to effective and reasonable participation at all levels of social, political, and economic decision-making shall not be abridged. The State shall, by law, facilitate the establishment of adequate consultation mechanisms.

Human Rights

SECTION 17. (1) There is hereby created an independent office called the Commission on Human Rights.

(2) The Commission shall be composed of a Chairman and four Members who must be natural-born citizens of the Philippines and a majority of whom shall be members of the Bar. The term of office and other qualifications and disabilities of the Members of the Commission shall be provided by law.

(3) Until this Commission is constituted, the existing Presidential Committee on Human Rights shall continue to exercise its present functions and powers.

- (4) The approved annual appropriations of the Commission shall be automatically and regularly released.

SECTION 18. The Commission on Human Rights shall have the following powers and functions:

- (1) Investigate, on its own or on complaint by any party, all forms of human rights violations involving civil and political rights;
- (2) Adopt its operational guidelines and rules of procedure, and cite for contempt for violations thereof in accordance with the Rules of Court;
- (3) Provide appropriate legal measures for the protection of human rights of all persons within the Philippines, as well as Filipinos residing abroad, and provide for preventive measures and legal aid services to the underprivileged whose human rights have been violated or need protection;
- (4) Exercise visitorial powers over jails, prisons, or detention facilities;
- (5) Establish a continuing program of research, education, and information to enhance respect for the primacy of human rights;
- (6) Recommend to the Congress effective measures to promote human rights and to provide for compensation to victims of violations of human rights, or their families;
- (7) Monitor the Philippine Government's compliance with international treaty obligations on human rights;
- (8) Grant immunity from prosecution to any person whose testimony or whose possession of documents or other evidence is necessary or convenient to determine the truth in any investigation conducted by it or under its authority;
- (9) Request the assistance of any department, bureau, office, or agency in the performance of its functions;
- (10) Appoint its officers and employees in accordance with law; and
- (11) Perform such other duties and functions as may be provided by law.

SECTION 19. The Congress may provide for other cases of violations of human rights that should fall within the authority of the Commission, taking into account its recommendations.

ARTICLE XIV

Education, Science and Technology, Arts, Culture, and Sports

Education

- SECTION 1.** The State shall protect and promote the right of all citizens to quality education at all levels and shall take appropriate steps to make such education accessible to all.
- SECTION 2.** The State shall:
- (1) Establish, maintain, and support a complete, adequate, and integrated system of education relevant to the needs of the people and society;
 - (2) Establish and maintain a system of free public education in the elementary and high school levels. Without limiting the natural right of parents to rear their children, elementary education is compulsory for all children of school age;
 - (3) Establish and maintain a system of scholarship grants, student loan programs, subsidies, and other incentives which shall be available to deserving students in both public and private schools, especially to the underprivileged;
 - (4) Encourage non-formal, informal, and indigenous learning systems, as well as self-learning, independent, and out-of-school study programs particularly those that respond to community needs; and
 - (5) Provide adult citizens, the disabled, and out-of-school youth with training in civics, vocational efficiency, and other skills.
- SECTION 3.**
- (1) All educational institutions shall include the study of the Constitution as part of the curricula.
 - (2) They shall inculcate patriotism and nationalism, foster love of humanity, respect for human rights, appreciation of the role of national heroes in the historical development of the country, teach the rights and duties of citizenship, strengthen ethical and spiritual values, develop moral character and personal discipline, encourage critical and creative thinking, broaden scientific and technological knowledge, and promote vocational efficiency.
 - (3) At the option expressed in writing by the parents or guardians, religion shall be allowed to be taught to their children or wards in public elementary and high schools within the regular class hours by instructors designated or approved by the religious authorities of the religion to which the children or wards belong, without additional cost to the Government.

SECTION 4. (1) The State recognizes the complementary roles of public and private institutions in the educational system and shall exercise reasonable supervision and regulation of all educational institutions.

- (2) Educational institutions, other than those established by religious groups and mission boards, shall be owned solely by citizens of the Philippines or corporations or associations at least sixty per centum of the capital of which is owned by such citizens. The Congress may, however, require increased Filipino equity participation in all educational institutions.

The control and administration of educational institutions shall be vested in citizens of the Philippines.

No educational institution shall be established exclusively for aliens and no group of aliens shall comprise more than one-third of the enrollment in any school. The provisions of this subsection shall not apply to schools established for foreign diplomatic personnel and their dependents and, unless otherwise provided by law, for other foreign temporary residents.

- (3) All revenues and assets of non-stock, non-profit educational institutions used actually, directly, and exclusively for educational purposes shall be exempt from taxes and duties. Upon the dissolution or cessation of the corporate existence of such institutions, their assets shall be disposed of in the manner provided by law.

Proprietary educational institutions, including those cooperatively owned, may likewise be entitled to such exemptions subject to the limitations provided by law including restrictions on dividends and provisions for reinvestment.

- (4) Subject to conditions prescribed by law, all grants, endowments, donations, or contributions used actually, directly, and exclusively for educational purposes shall be exempt from tax.

SECTION 5. (1) The State shall take into account regional and sectoral needs and conditions and shall encourage local planning in the development of educational policies and programs.

- (2) Academic freedom shall be enjoyed in all institutions of higher learning.
- (3) Every citizen has a right to select a profession or course of study, subject to fair, reasonable, and equitable admission and academic requirements.
- (4) The State shall enhance the right of teachers to professional advancement. Non-teaching academic and non-academic personnel shall enjoy the protection of the State.

- (5) The State shall assign the highest budgetary priority to education and ensure that teaching will attract and retain its rightful share of the best available talents through adequate remuneration and other means of job satisfaction and fulfillment.

Language

SECTION 6. The national language of the Philippines is Filipino. As it evolves, it shall be further developed and enriched on the basis of existing Philippine and other languages.

Subject to provisions of law and as the Congress may deem appropriate, the Government shall take steps to initiate and sustain the use of Filipino as a medium of official communication and as language of instruction in the educational system.

SECTION 7. For purposes of communication and instruction, the official languages of the Philippines are Filipino and, until otherwise provided by law, English.

The regional languages are the auxiliary official languages in the regions and shall serve as auxiliary media of instruction therein.

Spanish and Arabic shall be promoted on a voluntary and optional basis.

SECTION 8. This Constitution shall be promulgated in Filipino and English and shall be translated into major regional languages, Arabic, and Spanish.

SECTION 9. The Congress shall establish a national language commission composed of representatives of various regions and disciplines which shall undertake, coordinate, and promote researches for the development, propagation, and preservation of Filipino and other languages.

Science and Technology

SECTION 10. Science and technology are essential for national development and progress. The State shall give priority to research and development, invention, innovation, and their utilization; and to science and technology education, training, and services. It shall support indigenous, appropriate, and self-reliant scientific and technological capabilities, and their application to the country's productive systems and national life.

SECTION 11. The Congress may provide for incentives, including tax deductions, to encourage private participation in programs of basic and applied scientific research. Scholarships, grants-in-aid, or other forms of incentives shall be provided to deserving science students, researchers, scientists, inventors, technologists, and specially gifted citizens.

SECTION 12. The State shall regulate the transfer and promote the adaptation of technology from all sources for the national benefit. It shall encourage the widest participation of private groups, local governments, and community-based organizations in the generation and utilization of science and technology.

SECTION 13. The State shall protect and secure the exclusive rights of scientists, inventors, artists, and other gifted citizens to their intellectual property and creations, particularly when beneficial to the people, for such period as may be provided by law.

Arts and Culture

SECTION 14. The State shall foster the preservation, enrichment, and dynamic evolution of a Filipino national culture based on the principle of unity in diversity in a climate of free artistic and intellectual expression.

SECTION 15. Arts and letters shall enjoy the patronage of the State. The State shall conserve, promote, and popularize the nation's historical and cultural heritage and resources, as well as artistic creations.

SECTION 16. All the country's artistic and historic wealth constitutes the cultural treasure of the nation and shall be under the protection of the State which may regulate its disposition.

SECTION 17. The State shall recognize, respect, and protect the rights of indigenous cultural communities to preserve and develop their cultures, traditions, and institutions. It shall consider these rights in the formulation of national plans and policies.

SECTION 18. (1) The State shall ensure equal access to cultural opportunities through the educational system, public or private cultural entities, scholarships, grants and other incentives, and community cultural centers, and other public venues.

(2) The State shall encourage and support researches and studies on the arts and culture.

Sports

SECTION 19. (1) The State shall promote physical education and encourage sports programs, league competitions, and amateur sports, including training for international competitions, to foster self-discipline, teamwork, and excellence for the development of a healthy and alert citizenry.

(2) All educational institutions shall undertake regular sports activities throughout the country in cooperation with athletic clubs and other sectors.

ARTICLE XV

The Family

- SECTION 1.** The State recognizes the Filipino family as the foundation of the nation. Accordingly, it shall strengthen its solidarity and actively promote its total development.
- SECTION 2.** Marriage, as an inviolable social institution, is the foundation of the family and shall be protected by the State.
- SECTION 3.** The State shall defend:
- (1) The right of spouses to found a family in accordance with their religious convictions and the demands of responsible parenthood;
 - (2) The right of children to assistance, including proper care and nutrition, and special protection from all forms of neglect, abuse, cruelty, exploitation, and other conditions prejudicial to their development;
 - (3) The right of the family to a family living wage and income; and
 - (4) The right of families or family associations to participate in the planning and implementation of policies and programs that affect them.
- SECTION 4.** The family has the duty to care for its elderly members but the State may also do so through just programs of social security.

ARTICLE XVI

General Provisions

- SECTION 1.** The flag of the Philippines shall be red, white, and blue, with a sun and three stars, as consecrated and honored by the people and recognized by law.
- SECTION 2.** The Congress may, by law, adopt a new name for the country, a national anthem, or a national seal, which shall all be truly reflective and symbolic of the ideals, history, and traditions of the people. Such law shall take effect only upon its ratification by the people in a national referendum.
- SECTION 3.** The State may not be sued without its consent.
- SECTION 4.** The Armed Forces of the Philippines shall be composed of a citizen armed force which shall undergo military training and serve, as may be provided by law. It shall keep a regular force necessary for the security of the State.
- SECTION 5.** (1) All members of the armed forces shall take an oath or affirmation to uphold and defend this Constitution.

- (2) The State shall strengthen the patriotic spirit and nationalist consciousness of the military, and respect for people's rights in the performance of their duty.
- (3) Professionalism in the armed forces and adequate remuneration and benefits of its members shall be a prime concern of the State. The armed forces shall be insulated from partisan politics.

No member of the military shall engage directly or indirectly in any partisan political activity, except to vote.
- (4) No member of the armed forces in the active service shall, at any time, be appointed or designated in any capacity to a civilian position in the Government including government-owned or controlled corporations or any of their subsidiaries.
- (5) Laws on retirement of military officers shall not allow extension of their service.
- (6) The officers and men of the regular force of the armed forces shall be recruited proportionately from all provinces and cities as far as practicable.
- (7) The tour of duty of the Chief of Staff of the armed forces shall not exceed three years. However, in times of war or other national emergency declared by the Congress, the President may extend such tour of duty.

SECTION 6. The State shall establish and maintain one police force, which shall be national in scope and civilian in character, to be administered and controlled by a national police commission. The authority of local executives over the police units in their jurisdiction shall be provided by law.

SECTION 7. The State shall provide immediate and adequate care, benefits, and other forms of assistance to war veterans and veterans of military campaigns, their surviving spouses and orphans. Funds shall be provided therefor and due consideration shall be given them in the disposition of agricultural lands of the public domain and, in appropriate cases, in the utilization of natural resources.

SECTION 8. The State shall, from time to time, review to upgrade the pensions and other benefits due to retirees of both the government and the private sectors.

SECTION 9. The State shall protect consumers from trade malpractices and from substandard or hazardous products.

SECTION 10. The State shall provide the policy environment for the full development of Filipino capability and the emergence of communication structures suitable to the needs and aspirations of the nation and the balanced flow of information into, out of, and across the country, in accordance with a policy that respects the freedom of speech and of the press.

SECTION 11. (1) The ownership and management of mass media shall be limited to citizens of the Philippines, or to corporations, cooperatives or associations, wholly-owned and managed by such citizens.

The Congress shall regulate or prohibit monopolies in commercial mass media when the public interest so requires. No combinations in restraint of trade or unfair competition therein shall be allowed.

(2) The advertising industry is impressed with public interest, and shall be regulated by law for the protection of consumers and the promotion of the general welfare.

Only Filipino citizens or corporations or associations at least seventy per centum of the capital of which is owned by such citizens shall be allowed to engage in the advertising industry.

The participation of foreign investors in the governing body of entities in such industry shall be limited to their proportionate share in the capital thereof, and all the executive and managing officers of such entities must be citizens of the Philippines.

SECTION 12. The Congress may create a consultative body to advise the President on policies affecting indigenous cultural communities, the majority of the members of which shall come from such communities.

ARTICLE XVII

Amendments or Revisions

SECTION 1. Any amendment to, or revision of, this Constitution may be proposed by:

- (1) The Congress, upon a vote of three-fourths of all its Members; or
- (2) A constitutional convention.

SECTION 2. Amendments to this Constitution may likewise be directly proposed by the people through initiative upon a petition of at least twelve per centum of the total number of registered voters, of which every legislative district must be represented by at least three per centum of the registered voters therein. No amendment under this section shall be authorized within five years following the ratification of this Constitution nor oftener than once every five years thereafter.

The Congress shall provide for the implementation of the exercise of this right.

SECTION 3. The Congress may, by a vote of two-thirds of all its Members, call a constitutional convention, or by a majority vote of all its Members, submit to the electorate the question of calling such a convention.

SECTION 4. Any amendment to, or revision of, this Constitution under Section 1 hereof shall be valid when ratified by a majority of the votes cast in a plebiscite which shall be held not earlier than sixty days nor later than ninety days after the approval of such amendment or revision.

Any amendment under Section 2 hereof shall be valid when ratified by a majority of the votes cast in a plebiscite which shall be held not earlier than sixty days nor later than ninety days after the certification by the Commission on Elections of the sufficiency of the petition.

ARTICLE XVIII

Transitory Provisions

SECTION 1. The first elections of Members of the Congress under this Constitution shall be held on the second Monday of May, 1987.

The first local elections shall be held on a date to be determined by the President, which may be simultaneous with the election of the Members of the Congress. It shall include the election of all Members of the city or municipal councils in the Metropolitan Manila area.

SECTION 2. The Senators, Members of the House of Representatives, and the local officials first elected under this Constitution shall serve until noon of June 30, 1992.

Of the Senators elected in the election of 1992, the first twelve obtaining the highest number of votes shall serve for six years and the remaining twelve for three years.

SECTION 3. All existing laws, decrees, executive orders, proclamations, letters of instructions, and other executive issuances not inconsistent with this Constitution shall remain operative until amended, repealed, or revoked.

SECTION 4. All existing treaties or international agreements which have not been ratified shall not be renewed or extended without the concurrence of at least two-thirds of all the Members of the Senate.

SECTION 5. The six-year term of the incumbent President and Vice-President elected in the February 7, 1986 election is, for purposes of synchronization of elections, hereby extended to noon of June 30, 1992.

The first regular elections for the President and Vice-President under this Constitution shall be held on the second Monday of May, 1992.

SECTION 6. The incumbent President shall continue to exercise legislative powers until the first Congress is convened.

- SECTION 7.** Until a law is passed, the President may fill by appointment from a list of nominees by the respective sectors the seats reserved for sectoral representation in paragraph (2), Section 5 of Article VI of this Constitution.
- SECTION 8.** Until otherwise provided by the Congress, the President may constitute the Metropolitan Authority to be composed of the heads of all local government units comprising the Metropolitan Manila area.
- SECTION 9.** A sub-province shall continue to exist and operate until it is converted into a regular province or until its component municipalities are reverted to the mother province.
- SECTION 10.** All courts existing at the time of the ratification of this Constitution shall continue to exercise their jurisdiction, until otherwise provided by law. The provisions of the existing Rules of Court, judiciary acts, and procedural laws not inconsistent with this Constitution shall remain operative unless amended or repealed by the Supreme Court or the Congress.
- SECTION 11.** The incumbent Members of the Judiciary shall continue in office until they reach the age of seventy years or become incapacitated to discharge the duties of their office or are removed for cause.
- SECTION 12.** The Supreme Court shall, within one year after the ratification of this Constitution, adopt a systematic plan to expedite the decision or resolution of cases or matters pending in the Supreme Court or the lower courts prior to the effectivity of this Constitution. A similar plan shall be adopted for all special courts and quasi-judicial bodies.
- SECTION 13.** The legal effect of the lapse, before the ratification of this Constitution, of the applicable period for the decision or resolution of the cases or matters submitted for adjudication by the courts, shall be determined by the Supreme Court as soon as practicable.
- SECTION 14.** The provisions of paragraphs (3) and (4), Section 15 of Article VIII of this Constitution shall apply to cases or matters filed before the ratification of this Constitution, when the applicable period lapses after such ratification.
- SECTION 15.** The incumbent Members of the Civil Service Commission, the Commission on Elections, and the Commission on Audit shall continue in office for one year after the ratification of this Constitution, unless they are sooner removed for cause or become incapacitated to discharge the duties of their office or appointed to a new term thereunder. In no case shall any Member serve longer than seven years including service before the ratification of this Constitution.
- SECTION 16.** Career civil service employees separated from the service not for cause but as a result of the reorganization pursuant to Proclamation No. 3 dated March

25, 1986 and the reorganization following the ratification of this Constitution shall be entitled to appropriate separation pay and to retirement and other benefits accruing to them under the laws of general application in force at the time of their separation. In lieu thereof, at the option of the employees, they may be considered for employment in the Government or in any of its subdivisions, instrumentalities, or agencies, including government-owned or controlled corporations and their subsidiaries. This provision also applies to career officers whose resignation, tendered in line with the existing policy, had been accepted.

- SECTION 17.** Until the Congress provides otherwise, the President shall receive an annual salary of three hundred thousand pesos; the Vice-President, the President of the Senate, the Speaker of the House of Representatives, and the Chief Justice of the Supreme Court, two hundred forty thousand pesos each; the Senators, the Members of the House of Representatives, the Associate Justices of the Supreme Court, and the Chairmen of the Constitutional Commissions, two hundred four thousand pesos each; and the Members of the Constitutional Commissions, one hundred eighty thousand pesos each.
- SECTION 18.** At the earliest possible time, the Government shall increase the salary scales of the other officials and employees of the National Government.
- SECTION 19.** All properties, records, equipment, buildings, facilities, and other assets of any office or body abolished or reorganized under Proclamation No. 3 dated March 25, 1986 or this Constitution shall be transferred to the office or body to which its powers, functions, and responsibilities substantially pertain.
- SECTION 20.** The first Congress shall give priority to the determination of the period for the full implementation of free public secondary education.
- SECTION 21.** The Congress shall provide efficacious procedures and adequate remedies for the reversion to the State of all lands of the public domain and real rights connected therewith which were acquired in violation of the Constitution or the public land laws, or through corrupt practices. No transfer or disposition of such lands or real rights shall be allowed until after the lapse of one year from the ratification of this Constitution.
- SECTION 22.** At the earliest possible time, the Government shall expropriate idle or abandoned agricultural lands as may be defined by law, for distribution to the beneficiaries of the agrarian reform program.
- SECTION 23.** Advertising entities affected by paragraph (2), Section 11 of Article XVI of this Constitution shall have five years from its ratification to comply on a graduated and proportionate basis with the minimum Filipino ownership requirement therein.

SECTION 24. Private armies and other armed groups not recognized by duly constituted authority shall be dismantled. All paramilitary forces including Civilian Home Defense Forces not consistent with the citizen armed force established in this Constitution, shall be dissolved or, where appropriate, converted into the regular force.

SECTION 25. After the expiration in 1991 of the Agreement between the Republic of the Philippines and the United States of America concerning Military Bases, foreign military bases, troops, or facilities shall not be allowed in the Philippines except under a treaty duly concurred in by the Senate and, when the Congress so requires, ratified by a majority of the votes cast by the people in a national referendum held for that purpose, and recognized as a treaty by the other contracting State.

SECTION 26. The authority to issue sequestration or freeze orders under Proclamation No. 3 dated March 25, 1986 in relation to the recovery of ill-gotten wealth shall remain operative for not more than eighteen months after the ratification of this Constitution. However, in the national interest, as certified by the President, the Congress may extend said period.

A sequestration or freeze order shall be issued only upon showing of a prima facie case. The order and the list of the sequestered or frozen properties shall forthwith be registered with the proper court. For orders issued before the ratification of this Constitution, the corresponding judicial action or proceeding shall be filed within six months from its ratification. For those issued after such ratification, the judicial action or proceeding shall be commenced within six months from the issuance thereof.

The sequestration or freeze order is deemed automatically lifted if no judicial action or proceeding is commenced as herein provided.

SECTION 27. This Constitution shall take effect immediately upon its ratification by a majority of the votes cast in a plebiscite held for the purpose and shall supersede all previous Constitutions.

Ratified: February 2, 1987

Glossary



absentee voting – special voting participated in by registered voters residing outside the Philippines, government employees, military personnel, and media workers

abuse of authority – the use of authorized power for illegal acts or stepping beyond the bounds of authorized action

abuse of discretion – the willful disregard for the rules or proper procedure

abuse of power – a form of misconduct in which an official performs unlawful actions while in power

accountability – the acknowledgment of responsibility for an action and its consequences

accused – the individual who is charged with a crime in the criminal procedure; also referred to as the **defendant**

ad hoc committees – legislative committees that attend to national and local matters which are more specific and require immediate legislative action; also referred to as **special** or **oversight committees**

administrative law – a classification of law which is specifically concerned with the activities or actions of government agencies and departments

administrative orders – quasi-laws issued by the President which are enacted to help him or her improve his management of the government

advocacy – an activity undertaken by individuals and groups that influence the decision of the government regarding certain social, economic, and political issues

anarchism – the most extreme of the ideologies on the left, as it advocates the total dismantling and elimination of the state

appeal – an action which may elevate the decision on a case to the higher courts in the Philippines

appellate jurisdiction – jurisdiction enabling a court to review and evaluate the decisions made by lower courts

aristocracy – a form of government wherein power is held by a small group of people; also referred to as **oligarchy**

arraignment – the stage in the judicial process in which the complaint is formally read in court, and the accused is asked whether he or she pleads guilty or not guilty

Associate Justice – a high-ranking judge in the Philippine judiciary, serving in the Supreme Court, Court of Appeals, Court of Tax Appeals, and Sandiganbayan

authority – the right to exercise power

authorship – the stage in the legislative process in which a bill is written by a member or group of members in either House of Congress

autonomous regions – regions in the Philippines which are entitled to a certain degree of political autonomy, and are empowered to develop policies and projects which address their distinct needs and conform to their particular character or culture

Bagong Lipunan – a program of a social change and revival implemented by former President Ferdinand Marcos

bail – the payment for release from custody which is subject to certain conditions

barangay – the basic unit of local government in the Philippines

barangay government – the body which serves as the executive, legislative, and arbitration body of the barangay

Bicameral Conference Committee – a body composed of members from both legislative Houses, organized to reconcile differences regarding a bill and make appropriate amendments to it

bill – a piece of proposed legislation authored by a member or group of members from either House of Congress

Bill of Rights – the set of rights granted to every Filipino citizen

Board of Election Inspectors (BEI) – facilitators of the conduct of elections in polling precincts; consists of public school teachers and other volunteers

Cabinet – a body which provides counsel to and closely coordinates with the President in implementing government projects and performing other executive obligations

campaign period – the part of the electoral process where candidates convince the voters that they are the most fit to fill the positions they are running for

centrist – an ideological position which balances the ideas from the left and right sides of the political spectrum

certificate of candidacy – a document filed by prospective electoral candidate to apply for the permission to campaign and to run in the elections

charismatic authority – authority which is based on the personal qualities of the individual who wields power

checks and balances – a system which ensures that the powers of each government branch are monitored and regulated

Chief Justice – the head of the Supreme Court and Philippine judiciary

citizenship – the membership of the individual in a state; the quality of being a responsible member of the state

city – a local government unit composed of a group of barangays, distinguished by a higher rate of economic growth and a larger population and territory

city government – the administrative body of the city, composed of the City Mayor, Vice-Mayor, the *Sangguniang Panlungsod*, and the other city government departments

civil citizenship – a concept of citizenship which focuss on the freedom and rights of individuals

civil law – classification of law focused on outlining the rights and duties of individuals, particularly concerning contracts and other agreements

Civil Service Commission – a constitutional commission tasked with the selection and employment of government workers in the country

civil service law – a classification of laws pertaining to public service, particularly the employment, selection, and promotion of government workers

civil society – a broad sector of society composed of non-state actors who work to promote state development

civil society organizations – groups which work towards the improvement of civil society; includes non-government organizations, labor unions, and charitable organizations

closed primary election – a primary election in which only official party members are allowed to participate

coercive power – a classification of power which is based on a person's ability to compel other people through threats, punishment, and force

collectivism – a principle stating that the interests of a group as a whole must be prioritized

colonialism – an economic and political ideology which emphasizes that the power and influence of a country is based on the number of territories it conquers and the colonies it establishes

commercial law – a classification of law which focuses on trade concerns, particularly the production, distribution, exchange, and pricing of goods and services

communism – a socialist ideology that advocates the elimination of class divisions in society to achieve equality

complex interdependence – a perspective in real-life politics that sees societies, governments, and states as linked together through economic and political activities

component city – a city which is considered part of a province and elects provincial officials

conflict theory – a political theory which claims that society is defined by inequality and that it is composed of groups or social classes that often come into conflict with one another

Congress – the body which creates and passes laws to be followed by all of the citizens in a state; also referred to as the **legislative branch**

conservatism – a political ideology which upholds a strong, stable government and the firm implementation of laws

constitution – a set of primary principles and laws that defines what government the people intends to establish, and guides the government as it rules the state, also called an **organic law**

Constitutional Commissions – independent government bodies which are instituted by the 1987 Constitution such as the Civil Service Commission (CSC), Commission on Elections (COMELEC); and the Commission on Audit (COA)

constitutional convention – a meeting of delegates or representatives for the purpose of writing a new constitution or amending an existing one

constitutional monarchy – a monarchy whose rule is defined and limited by a constitution

continuity of laws – a characteristic of laws where a law remains valid until it is either amended, repealed, or replaced by a new law

corruption – the use of authority or influence for private interests

coup d'etat – an attempt by the military to take control of the government,

criminal law – a branch of law concerned with addressing crime and outlines criminal behaviors and their appropriate sanctions

cultural globalization – a dimension of globalization centered on cultural exchange

dagdag-bawas – a form of electoral fraud in which a certain number of votes are added to one candidate, while subtracting the same number of votes from another candidate

datu – the leader of a barangay during the pre-colonial period

de facto state – a type of state which has no legitimacy but has sovereignty

de jure state – a type of state which has legitimacy but cannot exercise sovereignty

decentralization – the principle of granting local sectors of government certain powers and adequate support in managing their local affairs

defendant – the individual who is charged with a crime; also referred to as the **accused**

democracy – a type of government in which the people possess sovereignty

Deputy Speakers – the second highest officers in the Philippine House of Representatives

direct democracy – a type of democratic government in which the people directly participate in all government activities

direct primary election – a primary election in which members of a political party directly choose their candidates

district representative – members of the House of Representatives who are elected to represent congressional districts

due process – the principle which mandates courts to maintain fairness throughout the whole judicial process and recognize and protect the rights of the parties involved in a case

economic globalization – a dimension of globalization which involves free trade and economic integration

economic power – the use of economic resources and finances, and the ability of states to influence other nations by denying or giving them access to certain resources

election – the formal decision-making process by which citizens choose public officials

election returns – documents which contain information regarding the conduct of elections in a specific area, including the date of the elections, the location of a particular polling precinct, and the number of votes for each candidate

electoral systems – mechanisms through which citizens are able to select government officials

election watchdogs – organizations which keep close watch on the election process and perform other election-related tasks

election-related violence – acts of violence intended to disrupt or unduly influence the elections

electoral fraud – any instance of illegal intervention in any stage of the election process

electoral protest – a dispute concerning fraud or inaccuracies in the conduct of an election

electoral tribunal – bodies which act as the sole judges of all disputes relating to the election of the President, Vice-President, and the members of the Senate and House of Representatives

eminent domain – the power of the government to acquire private property for public use

empowerment – the act of granting citizens the authority to address problems, uphold and promote their rights, and actively participate in government affairs

executive branch – the government branch that implements laws and creates policies and programs to address the needs of the state

executive orders – quasi-laws which the President enacts to help him or her with tasks as head of the executive branch of government

expert power – the classification of power which relies on the knowledge and skills of the individual

external sovereignty – the freedom of a state from outside influences or foreign intervention

fascism – a political ideology that is based on fierce nationalism and authoritarianism

federal government – a form of government where individual states with their own democratic governments come together as a federation

fiscal autonomy – the relative freedom of constitutional commissions to determine and spend their budget

global justice – a perspective regarding real-life politics which considers inequality and other social issues as a reality that needs to be addressed by the government, and advocates upholding human dignity, justice, equality, and adherence to the law

globalization – the gradual process of political, economic, and cultural integration brought about by an increased exchange of products, ideas, and technology throughout the world

governance – all processes related to governing and related actions undertaken by a government

government – a body or organization of people authorized to control and administer the state

graft – a form of corruption where an official uses public funds for his or her personal gain

head of government – a political leader who is tasked with administering government operations and leading government activities

head of state – a political leader who acts as the symbolic representative of the nation with little or no actual power in government

highly urbanized city – a city which has achieved a high degree of development, and has a bigger population and higher income compared to other cities

House of Representatives – the lower house of the Philippine Congress

ideology – a set of beliefs and ideas that shape an individual or group's views, actions, and interactions with the world

ilustrados – a group of liberal-minded Filipinos during the Spanish colonial period, who adopted liberal ideas and views as a result of travels and studies in Europe

impeachment – a process through which the President, Vice-President, members of the Supreme Court, and the Ombudsman may be removed from office

independent component city – a highly developed city which is administratively independent from the province and does not elect provincial officials

indirect primary election – a type of primary election in which party members elect delegates, who then convene and choose the party candidate

individualism – a principle stating that the rights and benefits of a single person must be prioritized

influence – the ability to entice or convince individuals through the use of persuasion and other non-coercive means

initiative – an event where citizens are allowed to directly propose laws and even amendments to the Constitution

instant run-off voting – a type of run-off election where there is only one election in which voters rank the candidates in their ballots

internal sovereignty – the ability of the state to govern and control its people and territory

interest groups – associations that promote certain causes and influence the government to act on them

judicial branch – the government branch that interprets and applies the laws of the state; also referred to as the **judiciary**

jurisprudence – the study of the nature of laws

Katarungang Pambarangay – the justice system implemented in the barangays

labor law – a classification of laws which addresses the relationship between employers and workers, and outlines their rights, responsibilities and privileges

law – a set of rules formulated by the government and is meant to be followed by all citizens of a state; also referred to as **statutory law** or **legislation**

leadership – the exercise of various forms of power in order to guide people in group or organization and lead them in the conduct of various tasks

leftist – a classification of ideologies that value individual freedom over government control

legal responsibility – the set of consequences outlined by law or an agreement with regard to a certain action

legal-rational authority – a type of authority based on a system of laws and an established bureaucracy

legislation – the process of the creation of laws; another term for **law**

legislative branch – the government branch which creates and passes laws; also referred to as **Congress, Assembly, or Parliament**

legislative committees – committees in Congress which review laws and state policies, and investigate the conditions of the country in order to propose appropriate legislation or amendments to existing laws

legislative process – the process through which a law is created

legitimacy – the right of the government to exercise power and authority; the recognition given to a state by foreign governments and international organizations

legitimate power – the classification of power based on a person's position, role, and duties in a group

liberalism – political ideology which considers economic and social inequality as undesirable and seeks to establish a society that provides opportunities for growth to all individuals

lobbying – the political action where citizens and groups directly engage with legislators in an attempt to influence policy-making

local government units – a component of the executive branch which encompasses provinces, cities, municipalities, and barangays

Lupong Tagapamayapa – the arbitration body of the barangay government

Marxism – a political ideology that believes capitalist societies are characterized by class conflict or the struggle between the working class and the capitalists

mass action – the collective behavior of large groups of people that may or may not require planning or coordination among the participants

mayor – the chief executive of the city and municipal government

Metropolitan Trial Courts – the equivalent of Municipal Trial Courts in Metro Manila

military power – the capability of a state to wage war against another state

Minority Floor Leader – the official who represents the members of the minority political bloc in the Senate

monarchy – a government ruled by a single person called a monarch

moral responsibility – the praise or punishment gained from performing an action

motion for reconsideration – an action in the criminal procedure in which the accused may request the court to conduct a new trial of the case

multidisciplinary approach – a manner of inquiry in political science which uses various tools, methods, theories, and paradigms from other social sciences

Municipal Board of Canvassers – the body which receives election returns from municipalities

Municipal Circuit Trial Court – a trial court which covers two or more municipalities

municipal government – the administrative body of the municipality

Municipal Trial Courts – a trial court which has jurisdiction over one municipality

municipality – a local government unit composed of a group of barangays, with a lower population count and income compared to the city

nation – a large group of people who share common characteristics such as language, traditions, and ethnicity

nation building – a process through which the citizens of a state become united towards political stability and national progress

nation state – a concept which combines the concepts of the nation and the state

National Board of Canvassers – the body which receives the election returns from the City Board of Canvassers, District Board of Canvassers, and Municipal Board of Canvassers

national government – the government that administers the entire state, also called a **central government**

nationalism – a shared identity among the citizens of a state, and belief in or support of the state

naturalized citizen – an individual who acquires Filipino citizenship

neocolonialism – the practice of a powerful state exercising control over a developing country using its economic, political, and cultural influence

neoliberalism – an ideology which stresses the importance of economic growth and the freedom of markets and capitalists from government intervention

non-state actors – groups or individuals who are not part of the government, but contribute in one way or another to the various aspects of state development

normative theses – ideal descriptions of political situations in the analysis of politics

obligation – an action that an individual is required to perform

Ombudsman, Office of the – the government office which prosecutes cases involving graft, corruption, and other offenses committed by public officials

open primary elections – a type of primary election in which citizens who are not party members may choose to participate in the primary of their chosen party

ordinances – the laws which local government bodies create and enact in their respective jurisdictions

original jurisdiction – the power of courts to hear a case for the first time

paradigm – the collected ideas and theories regarding a certain phenomenon that provide analysts a background or framework that will become the basis of their initial ideas and hypotheses

parity rights – the right given to American citizens to exploit the natural resources of the Philippines and control of public utilities

parliamentary system – a system of government which has a Prime Minister who heads the executive branch and is characterized by close ties between the executive and legislative branches

party-list representative – a member of the House of Representatives who comes from an organization corresponding to a specific social sector

patriotism – a feeling of attachment, loyalty, or pride to the state, nation, or homeland

patronage politics – a political practice where politicians use state resources to reward their supporters

plebiscite – the process through which citizens may approve or reject a proposed law, also called **referendum**

plurality system – an electoral system where the candidate who gets the most number of votes is elected into office

political citizenship – a concept of citizenship which emphasizes participation and exercise of political power by citizens

political culture – a set of beliefs, attitudes, and behavior that define political processes and governance

political dynasty – political families whose members occupy various positions in the local and national government

political globalization – a dimension of globalization which involves political cooperation and dialogue

political inequality – a form of inequality where political power is in the hands of a small group of individuals

political party – a group of people organized to participate in elections and hold power in government

political protest – an act performed by certain groups to denounce malpractices in the government or advocate a stance regarding political issues

political realism – a view that defines politics as an arena of conflicting interests among individuals and groups as they compete for power in government and society

political science – the study of politics and the government

political scientists – the individuals who are devoted to the study of political science

political spectrum – a graphic representation of political ideologies along a line from left to right

politics – the process that determines the distribution of power and resources

polity – a political entity, or any organization or community established to exercise political power

population – the people that compose the state

populism – an ideology that emphasizes the interests of the masses

“pork barrel” – a portion of the national budget which is allocated to the members of Congress to spend for local projects

positive theses – descriptions of political situations as they are, in addition to specific policy recommendations

power – the ability to exercise control or impose restrictions over individuals, and to compel other people to do certain tasks

power of taxation – a power of the state which allows the government to impose taxes and collect them from its citizens

precedent – the principle or rule established by an original or previous legal case which then defines subsequent rulings in other cases

preliminary investigation – the stage in the criminal procedure in which a prosecutor reviews evidence regarding the complaint and personally interrogates the accused

President – the head of the executive branch of a presidential or presidential-parliamentary government

presidential system – a system of government that recognizes the president as the highest official and the head of the executive branch of the government

presidential-parliamentary system – a system of government in which the president is elected by the citizens, then appoints a prime minister and cabinet from the members of the legislative branch

pre-trial phase – the stage in the judicial process where the facts relating to the crime are reviewed before the actual trial commences

primary – a preliminary election conducted within political parties to determine the candidates who will represent them in the general election

primary system – an electoral system in which elections are conducted in stages, with a preliminary election or primary conducted by political parties

Prime Minister – the head of the executive branch of a parliamentary system

proclamations – issuances that primarily set dates of national or local interest, such as holidays and commemorations, and includes the declaration of martial law or a state of emergency

proportional representation – an electoral system where a candidate must gain a required number of votes in order to be elected into office

province – a local government unit comprised of municipalities and cities

provincial government – the administrative body of a province

provincial governor – the highest official in the provincial government

psychological power – the ability of a state to use its image or reputation in influencing other countries

Punong Barangay – the highest official in the barangay government

qualitative methods – research methods that look beyond the numbers and provide a descriptive account of a political phenomenon

quantitative methods – research methods that rely statistics and hard data to discover information regarding a certain political phenomenon

quasi-judicial bodies – government agencies and offices that do not belong to the judiciary but perform some of its functions, such as arbitration, settling of disputes, and the rendering of judgment on certain cases

quasi-laws – pronouncements which are not legislated in Congress but have the force of law

reactionism – a political ideology which advocates a return to the old ways or the revival of old policies

realpolitik – politics that is primarily driven by the current needs, circumstances, or the prevailing reality in the state, instead of political ideals and moral and ethical standards

referent power – a classification of power based on an individual's personality and ability to attract followers

region – an administrative unit composed of provinces that share common territory and whose people have common cultural and historical ties

Regional Board of Canvassers – the body which receives the election returns from the provinces in the Autonomous Region in Muslim Mindanao

regional development councils – bodies that oversee economic planning and the implementation of development programs in regions

Regional Trial Courts – trial courts in the Philippines which have jurisdiction over the thirteen judicial regions in the country

regionalization – a process promoting greater growth and development throughout the regions of the country by identifying significant concerns and problems within each region, and formulating development plans that address them

Republic Acts – the laws created in Congress which are the bases of policies that carry out the principles in the constitution

republican democracy – a form of government in which citizens elect representatives who advocate their interests in the government

reward power – a classification of power based on the ability to give rewards and benefits

rule of law – a principle centered on the belief that a state should be governed by laws, and not by the arbitrary decisions its leaders

run-off system – an electoral system in which more than one election is held to determine the winners

Sangguniang Barangay – the legislative council of the barangay government

Sangguniang Bayan – the legislative council of the municipal government

Sangguniang Kabataan – the youth council of the barangay which conducts programs aimed at promoting the welfare of the youth

Sangguniang Panlalawigan – the legislative council of the provincial government

Sangguniang Panlungsod – the legislative council of the city government

Senate – the upper house of Congress

Senate President – the highest official in the Senate

Senate President Pro Tempore – the official who performs the functions of the Senate President in case of the latter's prolonged absence, incapacity, or removal from office

Senior Associate Justice – the member of the Supreme Court who acts as the presiding officer in place of the Chief Justice

separation of powers – a principle where each government branch has specific responsibilities and areas of responsibility

Shari'a Court – a court which hears cases on violations of Islamic Law

snap elections – elections which are held earlier than the date prescribed by the law

social action – mass actions that are directed towards a specific goal

social citizenship – a concept of citizenship which focuses on the economic, cultural, and social well-being that must be enjoyed by all citizens

social contract – a concept which defines the moral obligation of monarchs to serve the best interests of their people

social democracy – an ideology implementing socialist reforms in society within the framework of a democratic government and a capitalist economy

social movement – the collective and continuous effort supporting a certain objective which is expected to cause change in society

socialism – a political ideology which envisions the establishment of a state characterized by public ownership of resources and means of production

sovereignty – the ability of the state to take care of its affairs and enact its authority without interference from outside forces

Speaker of the House – the highest official in the House of Representatives

special elections – elections held at a later date due to a postponement or failure of elections

standing committees – legislative committees which attend to aspects of national affairs that require continuing or comprehensive legislative study, attention, and action

state – a political entity attributed to a society or population sharing a common territory and living under a government

state actors – individuals who create, implement, and constantly review policies and programs for the country; another term for government officials

structural-functionalism – a perspective that considers political systems as highly-ordered, stable systems whose various aspects contribute to the prevailing order and maintain the stability of society and state

suffrage – the right to elect government leaders and run for public office

supranational organizations – regional and international groups that adopt common policies for member states, and whose members surrender certain powers to higher authorities

Supreme Court – the highest court in the Philippines

taxation law – a classification of law which is concerned with identifying, determining, and regulating the taxes to be levied from a particular business transaction, trade, or activity

territory – the place where the people who compose the state are located

traditional authority – a type of authority rooted in traditional values and existing social ties and institutions

treason – the high crime of betraying the state or threatening its sovereignty

trial – the stage in the judicial process where the case or complaint is formally examined in court

two-round run-off election – a type of run-off election where a preliminary election involves all of the candidates, and a second round of voting is held where only the top two candidates participate

validity of laws – a characteristic of laws where they are recognized to bear power and are enforced by the state

veto – the power of the President to disapprove a law or a part of it and return it to Congress for review

Vice President – the second highest official in a presidential government

vote-counting machines – in Philippine automated elections, the machine which scans the ballot, records the votes, and transmits election results

voter's registration – a step in the election process in which personal information regarding the voter is entered to enable him or her to participate in the elections

voting – the exercise of suffrage

writ of *habeas corpus* – a legal principle that upholds the right of the accused against illegal arrest or detention

Bibliography



Books

- Agoncillo, Teodoro A. *History of the Filipino People*. Eighth Edition. Quezon City: C&E Publishing, 2012.
- _____. *The Burden of Proof: The Vargas-Laurel Collaboration Case*. Quezon City: University of the Philippines Press/ U.P.-Jorge Vargas Filipiniana Research Center, 1984.
- _____. *The Fateful Years: Japan's Adventure in the Philippines*. Edited by Laura L. Samson. In Two Vols. Quezon City: University of the Philippines Press, 2001.
- Agoncillo, Teodoro, A., and Fe B. Mangahas. *Kasaysayan ng Pilipinas: Pinalawak at Updated na Edisyon*. Quezon City: C & E Publishing, Inc., 2012.
- Arcilla, Jose S., S.J. *An Introduction to Philippine History*. Quezon City: Ateneo de Manila University Press, 2008.
- _____. *The Formation of Philippine Society*. Quezon City: Office of Research and Publications, Ateneo de Manila University, 2006.
- _____. *Recent Philippine History*. Quezon City: Office of Research and Publications, Ateneo de Manila University, 2001.
- Armenio, Peter V. *The History of the Church: A Complete Course*. Edited by James Socias, Peter V. Armenio, Mike Aquilina, and Emmet Flood. Illinois: Midwest Theological Forum, 2005.
- Aquino, Ramon B. and Grino-Aquino, Carolina C. *The Revised Penal Code*. Manila: Central Book Supply, Incorporated, 1987.
- Azucena, Cesario A. *The Labor Code with Comments and Cases*. In Two Vols. Manila: Rex Book Store, 1999.
- Blair, Emma H. and James A. Robertson, eds. and anns. *The Philippine Islands, 1493-1898*. Cleveland: 1903, Manila: Bank of the Philippine Islands CD Rom Edition, 2000.
- Bianco, Lucien. *Origins of the Chinese Revolution, 1915-1949*. Translated by Muriel Bell. London: Oxford University Press, 1972.
- Camacho, Marya Svetlana T. *Romualdez: A Family of 7 Generations*. Pasig City: Center for Research and Communications, 2016.

- Corpuz, Onofre D. *The Roots of the Filipino Nation*. In Two Vols. Quezon City: The University of the Philippines Press, 2005.
- Cortes, Rosario M., Celestina P. Boncan, and Ricardo T. Jose. *The Filipino Saga: History as Social Change*. Quezon City: New Day Publishers, 2000.
- Cruz, Isagani A. *Constitutional Law*. Quezon City: Central Lawbook Publishing Company, Incorporated, 2000.
- Cushner, Nicholas P., S.J. *Spain in the Philippines: From Conquest to Revolution*. Quezon City: Institute of Philippine Culture, Ateneo de Manila University, 1971.
- De Belen, Rustico T. *Medical Jurisprudence*. Quezon City: C&E Publishing, 2009.
- De la Costa, Horacio V., S.J. *Readings in Philippine History: Selected Historical Texts Presented with a Commentary*. Caloocan City: Bookmark and Philippine Graphic Arts Incorporated, 1979.
- De Torre, Joseph M. *Contemporary Philosophical Issues in Historical Perspective*. PasigCity: University of Asia and the Pacific, 2001.
- Dumol, Paul A., trans. *The Manila Synod of 1582: The Draft of Its Handbook for Confessors*. Quezon City: Ateneo de Manila University Press, 2014.
- Eckert, Carter J., et al. *Korea Old and New: A History*. Seoul: Ilchokak Publishers, 1990.
- Elliott, Charles B. *The Philippines to the End of the Commission Government: A Study in Tropical Democracy*. New York: Greenwood Press, 1968.
- Fairbank, John K., Edwin O. Reischauer, and Albert M. Craig. *East Asia: Tradition and Transformation*. USA: Houghton Mifflin Company, 1973.
- Fairbank, John K. *The United States and China*. Third Edition. Cambridge: Harvard University Press, 1971.
- Friend, Theodore. *Between Two Empires: The Ordeal of the Philippines, 1929-1946*. New Haven and London: Yale University Press, 1965.
- Garcia, Mauro, ed. "Documents on the Japanese Occupation of the Philippines," *Historical Bulletin*. March and June, 1965.
- Gies, Joseph and Frances Gies. *Life in a Medieval City*. USA: Apollo Edition, 1969.
- Golay, Frank H. *Face of Empire: United States – Philippine Relations, 1898-1946*. Quezon City: Ateneo de Manila University Press, 1998.
- Grunder, Gavel A. and William C. Livezey. *The Philippines and the United States*. Oklahoma: University of Oklahoma Press, 1951.
- Guerrero, Leon Ma. *The First Filipino: A Biography of Jose Rizal*. Manila: Guerrero Publishing, 2010.

- Guerrero, Milagros C. *Under the Stars and Stripes, Vol. 6 of Kasaysayan: The Story of the Filipino People*. Edited by Gina Apostol. Philippines and Hongkong: Asia Publishing Company Limited, 1998.
- Guevarra, Sulpicio, ed. *The Laws of the First Philippine Republic*. Manila: National Historical Institute, 1994.
- Guillermo, Artemio R. *Historical Dictionary of the Philippines, Third Edition*. Lanham, Md: The Scarecrow Press, Inc., 2005.
- Harrison, Francis B. *Origins of the Philippine Republic: Extracts from the Diaries and Records of Francis Burton Harrison*. Edited and Annotated by Michael P. Honorato. New York: Cornell University Southeast Asia Program, 1974.
- Hayden, Joseph R. *The Philippines: A Study in National Development*. New York: The Macmillan Company, 1942.
- Henderson, Gregory. *Korea: The Politics of The Vortex*. Cambridge, Massachusetts: Harvard University Press, 1968.
- Holcombe, Charles. *The Genesis of East Asia: 221 B.C. - A.D. 907*. Honolulu, Hawaii: Association of Asian Studies and University of Hawaii Press, 2001.
- Ikehata Setsuho and Ricardo T. Jose, eds. *The Philippines under Japan: Occupation Policy and Reaction*. Quezon City: Ateneo de Manila University Press, 1999.
- Ikehata Setsuho and Lydia N. Yu-Jose, eds. *Philippines-Japan Relations*. Quezon City: Ateneo de Manila University Press, 2003.
- Ileto, Reynaldo C. *Filipinos and their Revolution: Event, Discourse, and Historiography*. Quezon City: Ateneo de Manila University Press, 2003.
- Joaquin, Nick. *The Aquinos of Tarlac: An Essay on History as Three Generations*. Mandaluyong: Cacho Hermanos Incorporated, 1983.
- Jordanova, Ludmilla. *History in Practice*. Second Edition. London: Hodder Arnold, 2006.
- Jose, Ricardo T. "Accord and Discord: Japanese Cultural Policy and Philippine National Identity during the Japanese Occupation, 1942-1945," *Imperial Japan and National Identities in Asia, 1895-1945*. Edited by Li Narangoa and Robert Cribb. London and New York: Routledge Curzon, 2003.
- _____. "Preparing for Emergency: The Civilian Emergency Administration, 1941," *Diliman Review*. Vol. 38 No.2, 1991.
- _____. *The Japanese Occupation*, Vol. 7 of *Kasaysayan: The Story of the Filipino People*. Edited by Gina Apostol. Philippines and Hongkong: Asia Publishing Company Limited, 1998.

- _____. *The Philippine Army, 1935-1941*. Quezon City: Ateneo de Manila University Press, 1998.
- Jose, Ricardo T, and Lydia N. Yu-Jose. *An Annotated Bibliography on Philippines-Japan Relations*. Manila: YuchengcoCenter for East Asia De La Salle University, 1998.
- Jose, Vivencio R. *Heneral Luna: The History Behind the Movie; An Interview with Dr. Vivencio Jose, Author of The Rise and Fall of Antonio Luna* Edited by Ruby Rosa A. Jimenez. Mandaluyong City: Anvil Publishing, Incorporated, 2015.
- Kalaw, Maximo. *The Development of Philippine Politics, 1872-1930*. Manila: 1936.
- Kerkvliet, Benedict J. *The Huk Rebellion: A Study of Peasant Revolt in the Philippines*. Quezon City: New Day Publishers, 1979.
- Kim, Djun Kil. *The History of Korea*. Second Edition. California: ABC-CLIO, LLC, 2014.
- Legarda, Benito J., Jr. *After the Galleons: Foreign Trade, Economic Change and Entrepreneurship in the Nineteenth Century Philippines*. Quezon City: Ateneo de Manila University Press, 2001.
- Majul, Cesar A. *Muslims in the Philippines*. Quezon City: University of the Philippines Press, 1973.
- Manuel, Arsenio E. *Dictionary of Philippine Biographies*. In Three Vols. Quezon City: Filipiniana Publication, 1966.
- McCoy, Alfred W. and Edilberto C. De Jesus, eds. *Philippine Social History: Global Trade and Local Transformations*. Quezon City: Ateneo de Manila University Press, 2001.
- Mijares, Primitivo. *The Conjugal Dictatorship*. San Francisco: Union Square Publications, 1976.
- Nahm, Andrew C. *A History of the Korean People: Tradition & Transformation*. Second Edition. New Jersey: Hollym International Corporation, 2004.
- Newson, Linda A. *Conquest and Pestilence in the Early Spanish Philippines*. Quezon City: Ateneo de Manila University Press, 2011.
- Nishi, Toshio. *Unconditional Democracy: Education and Politics in Occupied Japan, 1945-1952*. Stanford, California: Hoover Institution Press, 1982.
- Norman, E. Herbert. *Origins of the Modern Japanese State*. Edited by John W. Dover. New York: Pantheon Books, 1975.
- Norris, Dr. I. Ivan. *Nationalism and the Right Wing in Japan: A Study of Post-War Trends*. London: Oxford University Press, 1960.
- Pacis, Vicente A. *President Sergio Osmeña: Full-Length Fully-Documented Biography of the Greatest Filipino since Jose Rizal*. In Two Vols. Quezon City: Phoenix Press, 1971.

- Palais, James B. *Politics and Policy in Traditional Korea*. Cambridge, Massachusetts: Harvard University Press, 1975.
- . *Confucian Statecraft and Korean Institution: Yu Hyongwon and the Late Choson Dynasty*. Seattle & London: University of Washington Press, 1996.
- Paras, Edgardo L. *Civil Code of the Philippines Annotated*. In Five Vols. Manila: Rex Book Store, 1995.
- Phelan, John L. *The Hispanization of the Philippines: Spanish Aims and Filipino Responses, 1565-1700*. Wisconsin: The University of Wisconsin Press, 2011.
- Poster, Mark. *Foucault, Marxism and History: Mode of Production Versus Mode of Information*. Oxford: Policy Press, 1990.
- Rafael, Vicente L. *White Love and Other Events in Filipino History*. Quezon City: Ateneo de Manila University Press, 2000.
- Ree, Eric Van. *Socialism in One Zone: Stalin's Policy in Korea 1945-1948*. Oxford: Berg Publishers, Ltd, 1989.
- Reischauer, Edwin O. *Japan: The Story of a Nation*. USA: McGraw-Hill Publishing Company, 1990.
- Salita, Domingo, ed. *Philippine Encyclopedia of the Social Sciences*. Quezon City: Philippine Social Science Council, 1993.
- Schumacher, John N., S.J. *Readings in Philippine Church History*. Second Edition. Quezon City: Loyola School of Theology, Ateneo de Manila University, 1987.
- . *The Making of a Nation: Essays on Nineteenth-Century Filipino Nationalism*. Quezon City: Ateneo de Manila University Press, 2012.
- . *The Propaganda Movement, 1880-1895*. Quezon City: Ateneo de Manila University Press, 2000.
- Schumacher, John N., S.J. and Nicholas P. Cushner. *Burgos and the Cavite Mutiny*. Quezon City: Ateneo de Manila University, 1969.
- Schurz, William L. *The Manila Galleon*. Manila: Historical Conservation Society, 1985.
- Scott, William H. *Sixteenth-Century Philippine Culture and Society*. Quezon City: Ateneo de Manila University Press, 2004.
- Stephenson, Carl. *Medieval History*. Edited and Revised by Bryce Lyon. New York: Harper and Row and John Weatherhill. Tokyo: N.p., 1967.
- Stokes, Anson Phelps, D.D., LL.D. *Church and State in the United States*. In Three Volumes. New York: Harper and Brothers, 1950.

- Sturtevant, David. *Popular Uprisings in the Philippines, 1840-1940*. Ithaca: Cornell University Press, 1976.
- Vitug, Jose C. *Civil Law*. In Four Vols. Manila: Rex Book Store, Incorporated, 2006.
- Ward, Robert E., ed. *Political Development in Modern Japan*. Princeton: Princeton University Press, 1968.
- Watkins, Frederick M. "Prospects of Constitutional Democracy" Chapter X in *Japan's Prospects*. Cambridge, Massachusetts: Harvard University Press, 1946.
- Welfield, John. *An Empire in Eclipse: Japan in the Postwar American Alliance System, A Study in the Interaction of Domestic Politics and Foreign Policy*. London and Atlantic Highlands, New Jersey: The Athlone Press, 1978.
- Wilson, Sandra., ed. *Nation and Nationalism in Japan*. New York: Routledge Curzon, 2002.
- Zialcita, Fernando N. *Authentic Though Not Exotic: Essays on Filipino Identity*. Quezon City: Ateneo de Manila University Press, 2005.

Online Sources

Electronically-Accessed Books

- Barreveld, Dirk J. *Philippine President Estrada Impeached!: How the President of the World's 13th Most Populous Country Stumbles Over His Mistresses, a Chinese Conspiracy and the Garbage of His Capital*. Lincoln, Nebraska: Writers Club Press, 2001. Accessed October 22, 2016. https://books.google.com.ph/books?id=Nfj48GxXRokC&printsec=frontcover&source=gs_bse_summary_r&cad=0#v=onepage&q&f=false
- Casambre, Athena Lydia. "Autonomous Regions: The Cordillera Autonomous Region," *Philippine Politics and Governance: An Introduction*, edited by Teresa Encarnacion Tadem and Noel M. Morada, 441-457. Quezon City: Department of Political Science, University of the Philippines – Diliman, 2006. Accessed October 11, 2016. http://halalan.up.edu.ph/mediabox/pdf/polisci_readings/17_Autonomous_Regions_The_Cordillera_Autonomous_Region.pdf
- Constantino, Renato and Letizia R. Constantino. *A History of the Philippines: from the Spanish Colonization to the Second World War*. New York and London: Monthly Review Press, 2008. Accessed September 21, 2016. https://books.google.com.ph/books/about/A_History_of_the_Philippines.html?id=kdhWCgAAQBAJ&redir_esc=y
- Croissant, Aurel. Introduction to *Between Consolidation and Crisis: Elections and Democracy in Five Nations in Southeast Asia*, edited by Aurel Croissant and Beate Martín. Berlin: LIT Verlag Münster, 2006). Accessed October 16, 2016. https://books.google.com.ph/books/about/Between_Consolidation_and_Crisis.html?id=wAY4jO3JrmoC&redir_esc=y

- Guillermo, Artemio R. *Historical Dictionary of the Philippines, Third Edition*. Lanham, Maryland: The Scarecrow Press, Inc., 2012. Accessed October 22, 2016. https://books.google.com.ph/books/about/Historical_Dictionary_of_the_Philippines.html?id=GBWye7c8NuYC&redir_esc=y
- Halili, Maria Christine N. *Philippine History*. Quezon City: Rex Book Store, 2004. Accessed September 20, 2016. https://books.google.com.ph/books/about/Philippine_History.html?id=gUt5v8ET4QYC&redir_esc=y
- Larousse, William. *A Local Church Living for Dialogue: Muslim-Christian Relations in Mindanao-Sulu, Philippines: 1965-2000*. Rome: Gregorian Biblical Bookshop, 2001. Accessed September 20, 2016. https://books.google.com.ph/books/about/A_Local_Church_Living_for_Dialogue.html?id=qyo-Hti0-KAC&redir_esc=y
- Sagmit, Rosario S., and Ma. Lourdes Sagmit-Mendoza, *The Filipino Moving Onward*. Quezon City: Rex Book Store, 2007. Accessed September 20, 2016. https://books.google.com.ph/books/about/The_Filipino_Moving_Onward_5_2007_Ed.html?id=SIq_FvJUr40C&redir_esc=y&hl=en
- Simbulan, Dante C. *The Modern Principalia: The Historical Evolution of the Philippine Ruling Oligarchy*. Accessed September 20, 2016. Quezon City: The University of the Philippines Press, 2005. https://books.google.com.ph/books/about/The_Modern_Principalia.html?id=55ZQdJG1G6IC
- Tyner, James A. *The Philippines: Mobilities, Identities, Globalization*. New York and London: Routledge, 2008. Accessed September 20, 2016. https://books.google.de/books/about/The_Philippines.html?id=fR21PsLhHIwC&hl=de
- Warren, James Francis. *The Sulu Zone, 1768-1898: The Dynamics of External Trade, Slavery, and Ethnicity in the Transformation of a Southeast Asian Maritime State*. Second edition. Singapore: National University of Singapore Press, 2007. Accessed September 20, 2016. https://books.google.com.ph/books/about/The_Sulu_Zone_1768_1898.html?id=VUZq93ydrwC&redir_esc=y

Journal Articles, Reports, and Manuals

- Albert, Jose Ramon, et al. "Preliminary Results of the Survey on Persons with Disabilities Conducted in Selected Metro Manila Cities." *Philippine Institute for Development Studies Discussion Paper Series* no. 2009-25 (2009): 17-143. Accessed October 25, 2016. http://www.ide.go.jp/English/Publish/Download/Jrp/pdf/151_02.pdf
- Asian Development Bank, *Civil Society Briefs: Philippines*, accessed October 21, 2016, <https://www.adb.org/sites/default/files/publication/30174/csb-phi.pdf>

Department of Agrarian Reform, *FAQs on: Rules and Procedures of DARAB and ALL*, accessed October 13, 2016, <https://www.dar.gov.ph/>

Estok, Melissa, et al. *The Quick Count and Election Observation: An NDI Guide for Civic Organizations and Political Parties* (Washington, D.C.: National Democratic Institute for International Affairs, 2002). Accessed October 27, 2016. https://www.ndi.org/files/1417_elect_quickcountdbk_1-30.pdf

Guerrero, Milagros C. "Pagtanaw sa Kasaysayan, Paghahanda sa Himagsikan: Mga Ideya ng Katipunan, 1892-1897," *Kasarinlan: Philippine Journal of Third World Studies* 14, no. 1 (1998): 37-52. Accessed September 23, 2016. http://journals.upd.edu.ph/index.php/kasarinlan/article/viewFile/1407/pdf_50

Mina, Christian D. "Employment Choices of Persons with Disability (PWDs) in Metro Manila," *Philippine Institute for Development Studies Discussion Paper Series* no. 2010-29 (2010). Accessed October 25, 2016. <http://dirp4.pids.gov.ph/ris/dps/pidsdps1029.pdf>

National Citizens' Movement for Free Elections, *Report on the Philippine General Elections 11 May 1998* (1999), accessed October 19, 2016, <https://www.namfrel.com.ph/v2/.../reports/1998/1998-NamfrelReport.pdf>

Patino, Patrick, and Djorina Velasco. "Election Violence in the Philippines," *Online Papers: Friedrich Ebert Stiftung Philippine Office*, accessed October 19, 2016, <http://library.fes.de/pdf-files/bueros/philippinen/50071.pdf>

Valle-Corpus, Menrado. "The Role and Function of the Prosecution in the Philippine Criminal Justice System," *Annual Report for 1997 and Resource Material Series* (1998): 272-279. Accessed October 13, 2016. http://www.unafei.or.jp/english/pdf/RS_No53/No53_27PA_Corpus.pdf

News Articles and Editorials

Ambay, Mark III. "Unjust: Why indigenous peoples are marching in the Philippines," *Bulatlat*, October 16, 2016. Accessed October 26, 2016. <http://bulatlat.com/main/2016/10/16/unjust-indigenous-peoples-marching-philippines/>

Amoroso, Venice, and Anna Bajo. "Phl dropout rates rising since 2007," *Philstar Campus*, June 12, 2014. Accessed October 25, 2016. <http://www.philstar.com/campus/2014/06/12/1333995/phl-dropout-rates-rising-2007>

Buenaobra, Maria Isabel T. "Social Media: A Game Changer in Philippine Elections." *The Asia Foundation*, April 27, 2016. Accessed October 26, 2016. <http://asiafoundation.org/2016/04/27/social-media-a-game-changer-in-philippine-elections/>

- Bueza, Michael. "How does the PH automated election system work?," *Rappler*, May 15, 2015. Accessed October 17, 2016. <http://www.rappler.com/newsbreak/iq/91663-philippine-automated-election-sytem-explained>
- CNN Philippines Staff. "ADB: Youth unemployment a 'policy challenge' for gov't," *CNN Philippines*, March 31, 2016. Accessed October 25, 2016. <http://cnnphilippines.com/business/2016/03/30/ADB-Youth-unemployment-policy-challenge-govt.html>
- Casauay, Angela. "How different is ARMM from the Bangsamoro?" *Rappler*, July 13, 2015. Accessed October 10, 2016. <http://www.rappler.com/newsbreak/in-depth/92639-armm-bangsamoro-comparison>
- Cigaral, Ian. "Youth groups call for quick passage of Anti-Dynasty Bill," *Rappler*, May 10, 2015. Accessed October 21, 2016. <http://www.rappler.com/move-ph/92744-youth-groups-anti-dynasty-bill>
- Drogin, Bob. "Philippines Candidate Calls for Voter Protests: Election: Charging fraud, Santiago urges her supporters to take to the streets. But an opponent warns of civil war," *Los Angeles Times*, May 16, 1992. Accessed October 18, 2016. http://articles.latimes.com/1992-05-16/news/mn-1986_1_civil-war
- Felicitas, Princess Dawn H. "Youth group seeks end to political dynasties," *Sun Star Cebu*, May 8, 2015. Accessed October 21, 2016. <http://www.sunstar.com.ph/cebu/local-news/2015/05/08/youth-group-seeks-end-political-dynasties-406459>
- Herrera, Christine F. "Aquino family reclaims Hacienda Luisita," *Manila Standard News*, November 3, 2015. Accessed October 22, 2016. <http://thestandard.com.ph/news/-main-stories/top-stories/190955/aquino-family-reclaims-hacienda-luisita.html>
- Lopez, Virgil. "MILF: Duterte's federalism may not solve Bangsamoro problem," *GMA News Online*, July 2, 2016. Accessed October 10, 2016, <http://www.gmanetwork.com/news/story/572145/news/nation/milf-duterte-s-federalism-may-not-solve-bangsamoro-problem>
- Macaraig, Ayee. "Pwersa ng Masang Pilipino: Coming full circle," *Rappler*, October 1, 2012. Accessed October 18, 2016. <http://www.rappler.com/nation/politics/elections-2013/13353-pwersa-ng-masang-pilipino-coming-full-circle>
- Mendez, Christina. "Hello Garci, 10 years later: Never Again," *Philstar Global*, May 29, 2014. Accessed October 18, 2016. <http://www.philstar.com/headlines/2014/05/29/1328562/hello-garci10-years-later-never-again>
- Nicholls, AC. "Manila takes part in One Billion Rising," *CNN Philippines*, Last modified February 15, 2016, accessed October 28, 2016, <http://cnnphilippines.com/news/2016/02/15/One-Billion-Rising-Gabriela.html>

- Piedad-Pugay, Chris Antonette. "The Philippine Bill of 1902: Turning Point In Philippine Legislation," *National Historical Commission of the Philippines*, September 6, 2012. Accessed September 28, 2016. <http://nhcp.gov.ph/the-philippine-bill-of-1902-turning-point-in-philippine-legislation/>
- Rappler. "A profile of Internet users in the Philippines." Accessed October 26, 2016. <http://www.rappler.com/brandrap/profile-internet-users-ph>
- Rodriguez, Fritzie. "'Politically-motivated' killings aplenty before PH elections – CHR," *Rappler*, April 8, 2016, October 19, 2016. <http://www.rappler.com/nation/politics/elections/2016/128700-election-related-violence-before-may-2016>
- Santos, Reynaldo Jr., "Fast Facts: What persons with disability are entitled to," *Rappler*, December 3, 2014. Accessed October 25, 2016. <http://www.rappler.com/newsbreak/iq/76769-fast-facts-benefits-persons-with-disability>
- Schmetzer, Uli. "Philippine Vote Turns Violent," *Chicago Tribune*, May 9, 1995. Accessed October 18, 2016, http://articles.chicagotribune.com/1995-05-09/news/9505090305_1_president-fidel-ramos-candidates-imelda-marcos-national-elections
- Shahani, Lila Ramos. "Why regulate political dynasties?," *Philstar Global Opinion*, August 10, 2015. Accessed October 21, 2016. <http://www.philstar.com/opinion/2015/08/10/1486177/why-regulate-political-dynasties>
- Simeon, Louise Maureen. "DA to focus on 10 poorest provinces," *The Philippine Star*, June 27, 2016. Accessed October 26, 2016 <http://www.philstar.com/headlines/2016/06/27/1597101/da-focus-10-poorest-provinces>
- The Manila Times. "Child labor persists in the Philippines," *The Manila Times*, March 16, 2015. Accessed October 25, 2016. <http://www.manilatimes.net/child-labor-persists-in-the-philippines/169878/>
- Felipe, Cecille Suerte and Jaime Laude, "Poll violence leaves 14 dead," *The Philippine Star*, May 10, 2016. Accessed October 19, 2016. <http://www.philstar.com/headlines/2016/05/10/1581638/poll-violence-leaves-14-dead>
- Villarete, Nigel Paul C. "The General Appropriations Act (GAA)," *The Freeman*, August 29, 2013. Accessed October 6, 2016. <http://www.philstar.com/freeman-opinion/2013/08/29/1147121/general-appropriations-act-gaa>

Websites and other online references

- Access. "Barangay Justice System (Katarungang Pambarangay): an alternative, community-based mechanism in the Philippines," Accessed October 26, 2016. <http://www.accessfacility.org/barangay-justice-system-katarungang-pambarangay>

- Caucus of Development NGO Networks. "Philippine Business for Social Progress," accessed October 21, 2016, <http://code-ngo.org/home/membership/pbsp.html>
- Chan Robles Virtual Law Library. "Accreditation of NAMFREL as Citizens' Arm to Conduct Pollwatch and Operation Quick Count." Accessed October 17, 2016. <http://www.chanrobles.com/comeleccitizensarm.htm>
- _____. "Accreditation of PPCRV as Citizens' Arm to Conduct Pollwatch and Operation Quick Count." Accessed October 17, 2016. <http://www.chanrobles.com/comeleccitizensarm1.htm#.WALNHeV97Mw>
- _____. "The Local Government Code of the Philippines," Accessed October 14, 2016. <http://www.chanrobles.com/localgov.htm>
- Children International. "Programs." Accessed October 25, 2016. <http://www.childreninternational.ph/programs/>
- Department of Agrarian Reform. "DAR, DTI provide women group with livelihood project." Accessed October 25, 2016. <http://www.dar.gov.ph/region-xii/53-news/1334-dar-dti-provide-women-group-with-livelihood-project>
- Department of Budget and Management. "Mandate." Accessed October 7, 2016. http://www.dbm.gov.ph/?page_id=343
- Department of Finance. "Who We Are," Accessed October 7, 2016. <http://www.dof.gov.ph/index.php/about/who-we-are/>
- Department of Science and Technology. "Mandate, Mission and Vision." Accessed October 7, 2016. <http://www.dost.gov.ph/index.php/transparency/about-dost/mandate-mission-and-vision>
- Department of Social Welfare and Development. "The Government Internship Program: Empowering the Youth to a Better Life," *Official Gazette of the Republic of the Philippines*, June 5, 2014. Accessed October 25, 2016. <http://www.gov.ph/2014/06/05/the-government-internship-program-empowering-the-youth-towards-a-better-life/>
- Gabriela Women's Party. "Women rise for truth, accountability." Last modified February 11, 2015. Accessed October 28, 2016, <http://www.gabrielawomensparty.net/content/women-rise-truth-accountability>
- GMA News Online. "ARMM history and organization." Last modified August 11, 2008. Accessed October 10, 2016. <http://www.gmanetwork.com/news/story/112847/news/armm-history-and-organization>
- House of Representatives. "Officials – House of Representatives." Accessed October 5, 2016 <http://www.congress.gov.ph/about/?about=officials>

Inquirer.net. "Department of Information and Communications Technology created." Accessed October 7, 2016. <http://newsinfo.inquirer.net/787103/aquino-signs-law-creating-department-of-information-and-communications-technology>

_____. "Framework Agreement on the Bangsamoro." Accessed October 10, 2016, http://www.inquirer.net/videos/pdf/gph_milf_framework_agreement_on_the_bangsamoro_booklet.pdf

Inter-Agency Council Against Trafficking. "About Us: History." Last modified May 9, 2012. Accessed October 25, 2016. <http://iacat.gov.ph/index.php/about-us-2/16-about-us-history/38-about-us-history>

Jacinto, Emilio. "Katipunan nang manga A. N. B. - Sa may nasang makisanib sa katipunang ito (The "Kartilya")," *Katipunan: Documents and Studies*. Last modified July 15, 2013. Accessed September 22, 2016. <http://www.kasaysayan-kkk.info/membership-documents/emilio-jacinto-katipunan-nang-manga-a-n-b---sa-may-nasang-makisanib-sa-katipunang-ito-the-kartilya/c.6.memb.kartilya.doc>

Lawphil.net. "The Revised Rules of Criminal Procedure (As amended, December 1, 2000)." Accessed October 13, 2016. http://www.lawphil.net/courts/rules/rc_110-127_crim.html

National Commission for Culture and the Arts. "Dayaw 2015 To Raise Awareness on Indigenous Peoples and Their Rights, Issues And Concerns." Last modified October 12, 2015. Accessed October 25, 2016. <http://ncca.gov.ph/dayaw-2015-to-raise-awareness-on-indigenous-peoples-and-their-rights-issues-and-concerns/>

National Economic and Development Authority – Cordillera Administrative Region. "Frequently Asked Questions (FAQ) on Cordillera Regional Autonomy." Last modified August 15, 2013. Accessed October 11, 2016, <http://car.neda.gov.ph/regional-development-council/rdc-autonomy-agenda/faq-on-regional-autonomy/>

National Economic and Development Authority. "About NEDA." Accessed October 7, 2016. <http://www.neda.gov.ph/about-neda/>

National Historical Commission of the Philippines. "Andres Bonifacio and the Katipunan." Last modified September 4, 2012. Accessed September 22, 2016. <http://nhcp.gov.ph/andres-bonifacio-and-the-katipunan/>

National Labor Relations Commission. "Mandate, Mission, Vision." Accessed October 13, 2016, <http://nlrc.dole.gov.ph/?q=node/5>

Official Gazette of the Republic of the Philippines. "A Primer on Impeachment." Accessed October 12, 2016. <http://www.gov.ph/interactive-a-primer-on-impeachment/>

_____. "Executive Orders," Accessed October 5, 2016. <http://www.gov.ph/section/executive-orders/page/2/>

- _____. "Presidential Decree No. 1508, Establishing A System Of Amicably Settling Disputes At The Barangay Level." Accessed October 26, 2016, <http://www.gov.ph/1978/06/11/presidential-decree-no-1508-s-1978/>
- _____. "Proclamations." Accessed October 5, 2016. <http://www.gov.ph/section/proclamations/>
- _____. "Administrative Orders." Accessed October 5, 2016. <http://www.gov.ph/section/laws/executive-issuances/administrative-orders/>
- _____. "The Constitution of the Republic of the Philippines." Accessed October 26, 2016. <http://www.gov.ph/constitutions/1987-constitution/>
- _____. "The Judicial Branch." Accessed October 26, 2016. <http://www.gov.ph/about/gov/judiciary/>
- _____. "The Legislative Branch." Accessed October 5, 2016, <http://www.gov.ph/about/gov/the-legislative-branch/>
- _____. "ARMM Cabinet." Accessed October 11, 2016. <http://www.armm.gov.ph/armm-cabinet/>
- Onebillionrising.org. "One Billion Rising Philippines 2017 launches." Accessed October 28, 2016. <http://www.onebillionrising.org/37719/one-billion-rising-philippines-2017-launches/>
- Philippine Commission on Women. "Herstory." Accessed October 25, 2016. <http://www.pcw.gov.ph/pcw>
- _____. Philippine Commission on Women. "Statistics on violence against Filipino women." Last modified May 13, 2014. <http://www.pcw.gov.ph/statistics/201405/statistics-violence-against-filipino-women>
- Philippine Rural Reconstruction Movement. "Ensuring Access to Basic Services, Enhancing Human Development." Accessed October 21, 2016. <http://www.prrm.org/thematic-areas/ensuring-access-to-basic-services-enhancing-human-development.html>
- Senate of the Philippines. "Composition of the Senate." Accessed October 5, 2016. <http://www.senate.gov.ph/senators/composition.asp>
- Smartmatic. "The Philippines 2016 General Election: Technology." Accessed October 20, 2016. <http://www.smartmatic.com/case-studies/article/the-philippines-2016-general-election-technology/>
- The Lawphil Project. "Commonwealth Act No. 473: An Act to Provide for the Acquisition of Philippine Citizenship by Naturalization, and to Repeal Acts Numbered Twenty-Nine Hundred And Twenty-Seven And Thirty-Four Hundred And Forty-Eight." Accessed October 27, 2016. http://www.lawphil.net/statutes/comacts/ca_473_1939.html

- The World Bank. "Defining Civil Society." Last modified July 22, 2013. Accessed October 21, 2016. <http://web.worldbank.org/WBSITE/EXTERNAL/TOPICS/CSO/0,,contentMDK:20101499~menuPK:244752~pagePK:220503~piPK:220476~theSitePK:228717,00.html>
- The World Factbook – Central Intelligence Agency. "East and Southeast Asia: Philippines." Accessed October 21, 2016. <https://www.cia.gov/library/publications/the-world-factbook/geos/rp.html>
- United States Department of Labor. "Child Labor and Forced Labor Reports." Accessed October 25, 2016. <https://www.dol.gov/agencies/ilab/resources/reports/child-labor/philippines>
- Vista Land. "Changing of the Guard at Vista Land," Last modified July 25, 2011. Accessed October 22, 2016. <http://www.vistaland.com.ph/news.php?id=111>
- Ambay, Mark III. "Unjust: Why indigenous peoples are marching in the Philippines," *Bulatlat*, October 16, 2016. Accessed October 26, 2016. <http://bulatlat.com/main/2016/10/16/unjust-indigenous-peoples-marching-philippines/>

Index



A

- absentee voting, 188
- Abu Bakr, 68
- abuse of authority ,9, 26,
- abuse of discretion, 26
- abuse of power, 26, 72, 109, 219
- accountability, 25-27, 121, 124, 209, 218
- Act No. 82, 96
- Act No. 83, 96
- ad hoc committees
 - see* special committees
- administrative law, 135
- administrative orders, 136, 154
- advocacy, 24, 222, 227, 235
- Age of Enlightenment, 5, 21
- Aguinaldo, Emilio, *President*, 79-86, 118,
- Akbayan Citizens' Action Party (AKBAYAN), 55
- alcaldia*, 70
 - alcalde mayor*, 70
- American Political Science Review*, 6
- Anarchism, 52
- Anderson, Benedict, 37
- Anti-Political Dynasty bill, 234
- appeal, 175
- appellate jurisdiction, 171
- Aquino, Benigno Jr., 110, 192
- Aquino, Benigno Simeon "Noynoy" III, 151, 192
- Aquino, Corazon, 110, 150, 192, 194
- aristocracy, 6
- Aristotle, 3-5
 - The Politics*, 5
 - Nicomachean Ethics*, 5
- ARMM, 163-164
- ARMM Regional Government, 220
 - ARMM Cabinet, 164
 - Bangsamoro Basic Law (BBL), 164
 - Executive council, 164
 - Regional Governor, 164
 - Regional Legislative Assembly, 164
 - Vice-Governor, 164
- arraignment, 175
- Asian Institute Management Policy Center, 234
- Asia-Pacific Economic Cooperation (APEC), 40
- Association of South East Asian Nations (ASEAN), 40, 108
- authority, 20
 - charismatic authority, 20
 - traditional authority, 20
 - legal-rational authority, 20
- Automated Election System (AES), 188, 200-202
- autonomous regions, 162
 - Cordillera Administrative Region (CAR), 163
 - Autonomous Region of Muslim Mindanao (ARMM), 163
- Averroes, 5
- Ayuntamiento*, 70

B

Bagong Lipunan, 109

bail, 175

Bangsa Sug, 68

Barangay, 67, 69-71, 159

Barangay government, 159-160

Punong Barangay, 160

Barangay secretary, 160

Barangay treasurer, 160

Sangguniang Barangay, 160

Lupong Tagapamayapa, 160

Sangguniang Kabataan, 160

Bell Trade Act, 104

parity rights, 104

Berelson, Bernard, 6

Bill, 140-141

Senate bill, 141

House bill, 141

Bill of Rights, 23, 54, 119, 129-131

Binay, Jejomar, 151, 193

Board of Canvassers, 189

Municipal Board of Canvassers (MBOC), 189

City Board of Canvassers (CBOC), 189

District Board of Canvassers (DBOC), 189

Regional Board of Canvassers (RBOC), 189

National Board of Canvassers (NBOC), 189

Board of Election Inspectors (BEI), 189

Bonifacio, Andres, 76-77, 79-80

Ang Dapat Mabatid ng mga Tagalog, 77

Borra, Resurreccion, 194

branches of government, 8

executive branch, 8-9, 154-159

legislative branch, 8-9, 134-145

judicial branch, 8-9, 170-171

bribery, 12, 26, 107, 109, 155, 173

C

cabeza de barangay, 70

Cabinet, 9, 156

Cabinet Departments and Offices, 156-159

Department of Interior and Local
Government (DILG), 156

Department of National Defense (DND), 156

Department of Agrarian Reform (DAR), 156

Department of Agriculture (DA), 157

Department of Education (DepEd), 157

Department of Health (DOH), 157

Department of Labor and Employment
(DOLE), 157

Department of Social Welfare and
Development (DSWD), 157

Department of Justice (DOJ), 157

Department of Foreign Affairs (DFA), 157

Department of Environment and
Natural Resources (DENR), 157

Department of Energy (DOE), 158

Department of Finance (DOF), 158

Department of Budget and
Management (DBM), 158

Department of Trade and Industry
(DTI), 158

National Economic and Development
Authority (NEDA), 158

Department of Tourism (DOT), 158

Department of Public Works and
Highways (DPWH), 158

Department of Science and Technology
(DOST), 159

Department of Transportation (DOTr), 159

- Department of Information and Communication Technology (DICT), 159
- campaign period, 187, 195
- capitan de barangay*
 - see cabeza de barangay*
- cash transfers, 219
- Central Administrative Organization, 102
- centralization, 68
- centrist, 49-50
- certificates of candidacy (CoCs), 187
- checks and balances, 9, 145, 154
- Children International, 221
- Cicero, 3, 5
- Citizenship, 119-120, 204-209, 223
- Citizenship Retention and Reacquisition Act of 2003, 205
- City, 161
 - Component city (CC), 161
 - Independent component city (ICC), 161
 - Highly urbanized city (HUC), 161
- city government, 161
 - mayor, 161
 - Sangguniang Panlungsod*, 161
 - vice-mayor, 161
- civil citizenship, 24
- civil law, 135
- civil service law, 135
- civil society, 232
- civil society organizations, 232-235
- Clark Air Field, 36
- climate change, 42, 223, 227-230
- collectivism, 208
- colonialism, 69
- commercial law, 135
- Commission on Human Rights (CHR), 124, 195
- common good, 206-207
- Commonwealth Act No. 1
 - see* National Defense Act
- Commonwealth government, 99
- Communism, 52
- Communist Party of the Philippines (CPP), 55
- complaint, 174-175
- complex interdependence, 12
- conflict theory, 10
- Congress, 135-145
- Congressional Initiative Allocation (CIA), 150
- Consejo de Indias*, 70
- Conservatism, 53
- constitution, 7-8, 21, 54, 118-125
- Constitutional Commissions, 124-125
 - Civil Service Commission (CSC), 124
 - Commission on Elections (COMELEC), 124
 - Commission on Audit (COA), 125
- Constitutional Convention, 99
 - 1934, 99
 - 1970, 108
 - 1986, 119
- constitutional monarchy, 6
- continuity of laws, 136
- Converse, Philip, 6
- Corona, Renato, 151
- corregidor*, 70,
- corregimiento*, 70
- corruption, 26, 218
- Cortes*, 75
- country, 35

Countrywide Development Fund (CDF)

See pork barrel

coup d'état, 110

Court of Appeals, 172-173, 175

Criminal law, 135

cronies, 109

cumplase, 71

D

Dahl, Robert, 6

Datu, 67-69

Dayaw Festival, 222

de Izquierdo, Rafael, 74

de la Torre, Carlos Maria, 74

decentralization, 159

Defensor-Santiago, Miriam, 193

democracy, 6-7

direct democracy, 7

federal government, 7

parliamentary system, 7

presidential-parliamentary, 7

presidential system, 7

republican democracy, 7

Deputy Prime Minister, 9

Diderot, Denis, 5

Disability Self-Help Organizations (DHSOs), 221

Disbursement Acceleration Program (DAP), 151

dual allegiance, 205

dual citizenship, 205

due process, 174

Duterte, Rodrigo, 234

E

economic inequality, 234

economic power, 23

EDSA Revolution, 24, 110

EDSA II, 235

elections, 184-191

election returns (ERs), 189

election servers, 189, 200

central server, 189

transparency server, 189

electoral systems, 184-185

plurality system, 185

proportional representation, 185

run-off system, 185

two-round, 185

instant run-off voting, 185

primary system, 185

primary, 185

closed, 185

open, 185

direct, 185

indirect, 185

election watchdogs, 186

Parish Pastoral Council for Responsible
Voting (PPCRV), 186

National Citizens' Movement for Free
Elections (NAMFREL), 186

National Press Club of the Philippines
(NPC), 186

election-related violence, 195

electoral fraud, 194, 201

dagdag-bawas, 194, 201

electoral protest, 144, 194, 201

electoral tribunal, 124, 144, 171

- Presidential Electoral Tribunal, 171
- Senate Electoral Tribunal, 171
- House of Representatives Electoral Tribunal, 171
- eminent domain, 22
- empowerment, 220
- en banc*, 144
- encomenderos*, 70
- encomiendas*, 70
- Enrile, Juan Ponce, 108, 151
- Estates General*, 50
- Estrada, Jose “Jinggoy” Ejercito, 151
- Estrada, Joseph Ejercito, 192-193, 235
- European Union (EU), 40
- executive orders, 136, 154

F

- Fascism, 53
- Ferdowsi, 5
- Epic of Kings*, 5
- First-Time Voters Network (FTVN), 234
- fiscal autonomy, 124
- Franco, Francisco, 54
- Franklin, Benjamin, 6
- French Revolution, 50

G

- Garcia, Carlos P., 107
- “Filipino First” Policy, 107
- Garcilano, Virgilio, 194
- General Agreement on Tariffs and Trades (GATT), 37
- General Appropriations Act, 144
- global justice, 12

- globalization, 34, 39-43
 - political globalization, 39
 - economic globalization, 39
 - cultural globalization, 39
- Gobernadorcillo*, 70
- Gomburza, 74
 - Burgos, Jose, 74
 - Gomez, Mariano, 74
 - Zamora, Jacinto, 74
- governance, 4, 10, 22
- government, 4, 6-10, 20, 35
- Government Internship Program (GIP), 221
- governor-general, 70-71
- graft, 12, 26, 155
- Greater East Asia Co-Prosperity Sphere, 101

H

- Hamilton, Alexander, 6
- Hare-Hawes-Cutting Act, 98
- Haribon Foundation for the Conservation of Natural Resources (Haribon), 233
- Harrison, Francis Burton, *Governor-General*, 97
- head of government, 22, 154
- head of state, 22, 154
- Helping Overcome Poverty through Education (HOPE), 221
- Hobbes, Thomas, 5, 34
- House of Representatives, 122, 136-139
 - Deputy Speakers, 139
 - District representative, 137
 - Majority Leader, 139
 - Minority Leader, 139
 - Party-list representative, 122
 - Speaker of the House, 139

Sergeant-at-Arms, 139

Huk movement,

see Hukbong Mapagpalaya ng Bayan

Hukbong Mapagpalaya ng Bayan (HMB), 105

Human Rights Watch, 222

I

ideology, 4, 48-51

functions, 49

see political spectrum

ilustrados, 73-75

impeachment, 121, 145, 155

indigenous peoples (IPs), 221-222

Indigenous Peoples Rights Act (IPRA), 222

Individualism, 208

influence, 20

initiative, 24, 135

in-school youths, 221

insulares, 73-74

Inter-Agency Council Against Trafficking
(IACAT), 221

International Criminal Court (ICC), 40

International Panel on Climate Change
(IPCC), 228

J

Jacinto, Emilio, 77

Japanese Military Administration, 101-102

Jefferson, Thomas, 6

Jones Law, 97

Judicial and Bar Council, 122, 171

Jurisprudence, 174

K

Kabungsuwan, Muhammed, 68

Kapisanan sa Paglilingkod sa Bagong
Pilipinas (KALIBAPI), 102

Kampuhan sa Diliman, 207

Kartilya ng Katipunan, 77

Katarungang Pambarangay, 176, 181-182

Lupon Chairman, 182

Lupon Secretary, 182

Lupong Tagapamayapa, 160, 176, 182

Pangkat ng Tagapagkasundo, 182

Katipunan, 76-80

Kempeitai, 102

Kilusang Mayo Uno, 55, 235

Kingdom

Maynilad, 68

Tondo, 68

Kongreso ng Mamamayang Pilipino
(KOMPIL), 235

Kongreso ng Mamamayang Pilipino II
(KOMPIL II), 235

Kyoto Protocol, 42

L

La Liga Filipina, 76-77

La Solidaridad, 75

Labor laws, 135

laissez-faire, 52

lakan, 67

Lakbayan ng Pambansang Minorya, 207

Laurel, Jose P., 97, 103

law, 134-136

Lazarsfeld, Paul, 6

leadership, 20

leftist, 50
 left-wing
 see leftist
 Legal Network for Truthful Elections (LENTE), 195
 legislation
 see law
 legislative committees, 139-140
 legislative process, 140-144
 Authorship, 141
 Bicameral Conference Committee, 142
 First Reading, 141
 Presidential Action, 142
 Second Reading, 141
 nominal voting, 141
 period of debate, 141
 period of amendments, 141
 sponsorship, 141
 Third Reading, 142
 Legislature, 7, 9
 legitimacy, 4, 20-21
 Liberalism, 51-52
 lobbying, 216
 Local Government Code of 1991, 159
 local government units (LGUs), 159-162
 Locke, John, 5
 lower courts, 172-173
 Metropolitan Trial Courts (MeTCs), 173
 Municipal Trial Courts (MTCs), 173
 Municipal Circuit Trial Court (MCTCs), 173
 Regional Trial Courts (RTCs), 173

M

Macapagal, Diosdado, 107
 Land Reform Code, 107
 Macapagal-Arroyo, Gloria, 193
 MacArthur, Douglas, 103-104
 Macchiavelli, Niccolò, 3, 5
 Magna Carta for Disabled Persons, 221
 Magna Carta for Women, 220
 Magsaysay, Ramon, 106-107
Maharlika, 67
 Malolos Congress, 84
 MAPHILINDO, 107
 Marcos, Ferdinand, 108-110
 Marcos, Ferdinand “Bongbong” Jr., 195, 201
 martial law, 121, 136, 155
 Martial Law Period, 24, 108
 Marxism, 52
 mass action, 217
 Military Bases Agreement, 105-106
 military power, 23
Ministerio de Ultramar, 70
 moderate
 see centrist
 monarchy, 6-7
 More, Thomas, 5
 Utopia, 5
 Morga, Antonio, 75
 Sucesos de las islas Filipinas, 75
 Moro National Liberation Front (MNLF), 164
 motion for reconsideration, 175
 multidisciplinary approach, 11
 Municipal government, 160-161
 municipal mayor, 160

Sangguniang Bayan, 161

municipal vice-mayor, 161

Municipality, 160

Muslim Association for Climate Change
Action (MACCA), 227

N

Nacionalista Party (NP), 191-192

Napoles, Janet Lim, 151

nation, 34, 37-39

nation building, 38, 208

nation state, 34

National Aid to Local Government Units
(NALGUs), 150

National Assembly, 99

National Commission for Culture and
the Arts (NCCA), 222

National Council on Disability Affairs
(NCDA), 221

National Defense Act, 99

National Framework Strategy on Climate
Change (NFSCC), 228

national government, 156

National Language Commission, 100

National Youth Commission (NYC), 221

nationalism, 206

nationhood, 37-39

natural-born citizen, 205

naturalization
see naturalized citizen

naturalized citizen, 205

Nazi Party, 53

Negros Republic, 85

Neocolonialism, 105

neoliberalism, 52

New People's Army (NPA), 108

New Society

see *Bagong Lipunan*

Nolan Chart, 51

non-state actors, 232-233

normative theses, 3

North American Free Trade Agreement
(NAFTA), 40

North Atlantic Treaty Organization
(NATO), 40

Nueva España, 70

O

obligation, 25

Office of the Ombudsman, 26

Official Gazette, 136

oligarchy
see aristocracy

Omnibus Election Code, 186-187

ordinances, 135, 161

organic law, 135

original jurisdiction, 171

Osmeña, Sergio, 96-98, 191

Os-Rox Mission, 98

out-of-school youths, 221

override of veto, 123, 142

oversight committees
see special committees

P

Paje, Ramon J.P., 227

Pamahalaan ng Sangkatagalugan, 80

panglima, 68

paradigm, 11

- Partido Federal*, 96
- patriotism, 206
- patronage politics, 55
- People Power Movement
 see EDSA Revolution
- permanent committees
 see standing committees
- Peron, Juan Domingo, 54
- Persons with disabilities (PWDs), 220-221
- Philippine Act of 1902, 96
- Philippine Assembly, 96
- Philippine Atmospheric, Geophysical and
 Astronomical Services Administration
 (PAGASA), 228
- Philippine Autonomy Act
 see Jones Law
- Philippine Business for Social Progress
 (PBSP), 233
- Philippine Commission, 95
 First, 95
 Second, 95
- Philippine Commission on Women (PCW), 220
- Philippine Congress, 122, 136-140
 Senate, 122, 137
 House of Representatives, 122, 137
- Philippine Constitution, 118-125
 Biak-na-Bato constitution, 81, 118
 Malolos Constitution, 84-85, 118
 1935 Constitution, 99, 119
 1943 Constitution, 103, 119
 1973 Constitution, 109, 119
 1987 Constitution, 118, 119
 Freedom Constitution, 21, 119
- Philippine Executive Commission (PEC), 102
- Philippine Independence Act of 1933
 see Hare-Hawes-Cutting Act
- Philippine Institute for Development
 Studies (PIDS), 221
- Philippine judiciary, 122, 136, 170-174
- Philippine political parties, 191-193
 Kilusang Bagong Lipunan (KBL), 192
 Laban ng Demokratikong Pilipino
 (LDP), 192
 Lakas-Christian Muslim Democrats
 (Lakas-CMD), 193
 Liberal Party (LP), 192
 Nacionalista Party (NP), 191
 Partidong Demokratikong Pilipino
 Lakas ng Bayan (PDP-LABAN), 192
 People's Reform Party (PRP), 193
 Pwersa ng Masang Pilipino (PMP), 193
 United Nationalist Alliance (UNA), 193
 Bagong Lakas ng Nueva Ecija
 (BALANE), 193
 People's Champ Movement, 193
- Philippine Republic
 Biak-na-Bato Republic, 80-81
 First, 85
 Second, 103
 Third, 105
 Fourth, 108
 Fifth, 110, 119
- Philippine Rural Reconstruction
 Movement, Inc. (PRRM), 233
- Philippine Statistics Authority, 221-222
- Philippine Strategy on Climate Change
 Adaptation (PSCCA), 228
- Plato, 5
 The Republic, 5
 The Laws, 5

- plebiscite, 24
- political citizenship, 24
- Political Compass, 51
- political culture, 49
- political dynasty, 234
- political inequality, 234
- political participation, 214-215
- political party, 191
- political protest, 217
- political realism, 12
- political science, 2-6
- political scientists, 3, 6, 10-12
- political spectrum, 49
- politics, 2-3
- polity, 67
- polo y servicio*, 70, 72
- popular revolt, 24, 110
- population, 4
- populism, 55
- pork barrel, 149-152
- positive theses, 3
- power, 20
 - coercive power, 20
 - reward power, 20
 - expert power, 20
 - legitimate power, 20
 - referent power, 20
- power of taxation, 22
- precedent, 174
- Precinct Count Optical Scan (PCOS) Machines
 - see* Vote-Counting Machines (VCMs)
- preliminary investigation, 174

- President, 121-124, 154-156
- Presidential Commission on Good Government (PCGG), 26
- Presidential Decree, 109
 - Presidential Decree 1, 109
 - Presidential Decree 2, 109
- pre-trial phase, 175
- Prime Minister, 8-9, 22, 110
- principales*, 69-71
- principalia*
 - see principales*
- Priority Development Assistance Fund (PDAF), 150
- proclamations, 136
- propaganda, 23
- Propaganda Movement, 74-76
- province, 162
- provincial government, 162
 - governor, 162
 - vice-governor, 162, 164
 - Sangguniang Panlalawigan*, 162
- psychological power, 23
- pueblos*, 69-71
- puppet government, 36, 103

Q

- Qadi*, 68
- qualitative methods, 11
- quantitative methods, 11
- quasi-judicial bodies, 173-174
 - National Labor Relations Commission (NLRC), 173
 - Department of Agrarian Reform Adjudication Board (DARAB), 174

quasi-laws, 154
Quezon, Manuel L., 36, 38, 96-101
Quirino, Elpidio, 106

R

rajah, 67
rajah laut, 68
Ramos, Fidel V., 193
reactionism, 53
real life politics, 11-12
realpolitik, 12
recess, 175
Recopilacion de las leyes de los reynos de las Indias, 71
Recto, Claro M., 99, 102, 104
red tape, 219
REDD+, 229-230
reduccion, 69
referendum, 24, 135
region, 162
regional development councils, 162
regionalization, 162
Republic Acts, 135
Republic Act No. 9225
 see Citizenship Retention and Reacquisition Act of 2003
Rescue and Rehabilitation of Abused Domestic Workers, 221
residencia, 71
responsibility, 25
 legal responsibility, 25
 moral responsibility, 25
Revilla, Ramon “Bong” Jr., 151
right-wing, 50

Rizal, Jose, 75-76
 Filipinas dentro de cien años, 75
 Sucesos de las Islas Filipinas (annotations), 75
Robredo, Leni, 195, 201
Rousseau, Jean Jacques, 5-6
Roxas, Manuel, 105-106
Royal Audiencia, 71
Rubaiyat of Omar Khayam, 5
rule of law, 134
Rules of Procedure Governing Inquiries in Aid of Legislation, 140
Ruma Bichara, 68

S

Sakdal-Ganap Party, 102
Sayre, Francis, 100
secularization, 74-75
Senate, 122, 137
 Senate President, 137
 Senate President Pro Tempore, 137
 Majority Floor Leader, 137
 Minority Floor Leader, 137
Senate Committee on Accountability of Public Officers and Investigations, 26
separation of powers, 8-9, 122
smart technology, 219
snap elections, 110, 191
social action, 217
social citizenship, 24
social contract, 6, 21
social democracy, 52
social freedom, 51
social movement, 235

Socialism, 52
 Southeast Asian Treaty Organization (SEATO), 107
 sovereign state, 36
 sovereignty, 4, 20, 35
 Internal sovereignty, 35
 External sovereignty, 35
 special committees, 140
 House Committee on Southern Tagalog Development, 140
 Joint Congressional Oversight Committee on the Clean Air Act, 140
 House Committee on Peace, Reconciliation, and Unity, 140
 specialized courts, 173-174
 Sandiganbayan, 26, 173
 Court of Tax Appeals, 173
 Shari'a Courts, 173
 Shari'a District Courts (SDCs), 173
 Shari'a Circuit Courts (SCCs), 173
 special elections, 191
 St. Augustine of Hippo, 5
 City of God, 5
 St. Thomas Aquinas, 5
 standing committees, 140
 Committee on Agriculture and Food, 140
 Committee on Accounts, 140
 Committee on Rules, 140
 state, 4, 34-37
 de jure state, 36,
 de facto state, 36
 state actors, 232-233
 statement of assets, liabilities, and net worth (SALN), 27
 statutory law
 see law
 Stonehill, Harry, 107
 Stonehill Scandal, 107
 Structural-functionalism, 10
 Subic Bay Naval Base, 36
 suffrage, 184-185, 217
 sultanate, 68
 Sulu, 68
 Maguindanao, 68
 Maynilad, 68-69
 supranational organizations, 39-40
 Supreme Court, 122, 124, 171-172
 Chief Justice, 171-172
 Associate Justice, 171

T
 Taxation law, 135
 Tejeros Convention, 79
 territory, 4, 35
 terrorism, 40
 transparency, 27
 Transparency and Accountability Network (TAN), 234
 treason, 155
 Treaty of Paris, 85, 95
 trial, 175
 trickle down economics, 52-53
 Tydings Rehabilitation Act, 105
 Tydings-Kocalkowski Act of 1940, 100
 Tydings-McDuffie Law, 98

U

UN Security Council, 40
United Nations High Commissioner for
Refugees, 222
Universal Declaration of Human Rights, 37
United States Army Forces in the
Far East (USAFFE), 101

V

validity of laws, 136
Vargas, Jorge, 102
Veloso, Mary Jane, 207
veto, 123, 142
Vice President, 122, 155-156
Virata, Cesar, 110
visita, 71
Voltaire, 5
Volunteers Against Crime and Corruption
(VACC), 234
Vote-Counting Machines (VCMs), 200
Voter's registration, 188
Voting, 184, 188-189, 217-218

W

wajir, 68
waste disposal, 223
waste segregation, 223
Weber, Max, 20
women, 220-221, 235
Wood, Leonard, 97
writ of *habeas corpus*, 54, 121, 155

Y

youth, 220-221

ABOUT THE BOOK


Philippine Politics and Governance (for Senior High School) aims to develop informed and active citizens by helping students understand and analyze political concepts such as government, governance, power, authority, and the state. The textbook familiarizes the students with the significant features of the Philippine government, as well as the processes and relationships that define governance in the country. The discussion and activities featured in this book encourage students to adopt a more comprehensive view when looking at political developments, issues, and problems at the local, national, and global levels. They also provide opportunities for advocacy-building, community interaction, and participation in government, thus empowering students to take the initiative in addressing concerns and issues in their respective communities.

ABOUT THE AUTHOR

Arnel E. Joven, Ph.D. is a History professor and researcher, specializing in the History of Medicine and Medical Anthropology in the Philippines during the Japanese Occupation Period, and in Korea, Japan, and China. He is chairperson of the History Department of the University of Asia and the Pacific, and teaches Christian Civilization (Western History), Philippine History, Rizal, Korean Studies, and Japanese Studies. He completed his baccalaureate degree in History from the Ateneo de Manila University in 2004 and finished his masters degree in History from the same university in 2007. He received his Ph.D. in History from the University of the Philippines in 2012. He is a member of the Asian Society for the History of Medicine, Society for the Social History of Medicine (UK), and the Association for Asian Studies.

All books published by C&E Publishing, Inc. comply with the requirements of the Department of Education for the new K to 12 curriculum. These books include lessons and activities that develop the macro skills and basic competencies in the different subject areas. Rubrics are also provided to measure the desired outcomes of the learning tasks.

These books aim to prepare the students in relating with their peers and families, the greater Filipino community and those in other Southeast Asian countries, and the world.

 Published by
C & E Publishing, Inc.
839 EDSA, South Triangle
Quezon City, Philippines
Tel. No.: (02) 929-5088
E-mail: info@cebookshop.com
Website: www.cebookshop.com

**THINK
GLOBAL**
Ready for ASEAN Integration



MEMBER